

# Linked Discourses

Bhikkhu Sujato



# LINKED DISCOURSES

A plain translation of the Saṃyutta Nikāya



*translated and introduced by*

BHIKKHU SUJATO

VOLUME 4

SN 35–44

THE GROUP OF LINKED DISCOURSES  
BEGINNING WITH THE SIX SENSE FIELDS

SAḶĀYATANAVAGGASAMĪYUTTA

*Linked Discourses* is a translation of the Saṃyuttanikāya by Bhikkhu Sujato.

Creative Commons Zero (CC0)

To the extent possible under law, Bhikkhu Sujato has waived all copyright and related or neighboring rights to *Linked Discourses*.

This work is published from Australia.

*This translation is an expression of an ancient spiritual text that has been passed down by the Buddhist tradition for the benefit of all sentient beings. It is dedicated to the public domain via Creative Commons Zero (CC0). You are encouraged to copy, reproduce, adapt, alter, or otherwise make use of this translation. The translator respectfully requests that any use be in accordance with the values and principles of the Buddhist community.*

**Web publication date** 2018

**This edition** 2024-02-12 01:19:44

**Publication type** paperback

**Edition** ed5

**Number of volumes** 5

**Publication ISBN** 978-1-76132-086-6

**Volume ISBN** 978-1-76132-090-3

**Publication URL** <https://suttacentral.net/editions/sn/en/sujato>

**Source URL** <https://github.com/suttacentral/bilara-data/tree/published/translation/en/sujato/sutta/sn>

**Publication number** scpub4

Map of Jambudipa is by Jonas David Mitja Lang, and is released by him under Creative Commons Zero (CC0).

Published by SuttaCentral

*SuttaCentral,  
c/o Alwis & Alwis Pty Ltd  
Kaurana Country,  
Suite 12,  
198 Greenhill Road,  
Eastwood,  
SA 5063,  
Australia*

# Contents

## LINKED DISCOURSES ON THE SIX SENSE FIELDS

### THE FIRST FIFTY

#### ***The Chapter on Impermanence***

SN 35.1	The Interior as Impermanent ( <i>Ajjhattāniccasutta</i> )	3
SN 35.2	The Interior as Suffering ( <i>Ajjhattadukkhassutta</i> )	4
SN 35.3	The Interior as Not-Self ( <i>Ajjhattānattasutta</i> )	4
SN 35.4	The Exterior as Impermanent ( <i>Bāhirāniccasutta</i> )	5
SN 35.5	The Exterior as Suffering ( <i>Bāhiradukkhassutta</i> )	5
SN 35.6	The Exterior as Not-Self ( <i>Bāhirānattasutta</i> )	6
SN 35.7	The Interior as Impermanent in the Three Times ( <i>Ajjhattāniccātītānāgatasutta</i> )	6
SN 35.8	The Interior as Suffering in the Three Times ( <i>Ajjhattadukkhātītānāgatasutta</i> )	6
SN 35.9	The Interior as Not-Self in the Three Times ( <i>Ajjhattānattātītānāgatasutta</i> )	7
SN 35.10	The Exterior as Impermanent in the Three Times ( <i>Bāhirāniccātītānāgatasutta</i> )	7
SN 35.11	The Exterior as Suffering in the Three Times ( <i>Bāhiradukkhātītānāgatasutta</i> )	7
SN 35.12	The Exterior as Not-Self in the Three Times ( <i>Bāhirānattātītānāgatasutta</i> )	8

### ***The Chapter on Pairs***

SN 35.13	Before My Awakening (Interior) ( <i>Paṭhamapubbesambodhasutta</i> )	9
SN 35.14	Before My Awakening (Exterior) ( <i>Dutiyapubbesambodhasutta</i> )	10
SN 35.15	In Search of Gratification (Interior) ( <i>Paṭhamaassādapariyesanasutta</i> )	10
SN 35.16	In Search of Gratification (Exterior) ( <i>Dutiyaassādapariyesanasutta</i> )	11
SN 35.17	If There Were No Gratification (Interior) ( <i>Paṭhamanoceassādasutta</i> )	11
SN 35.18	If There Were No Gratification (Exterior) ( <i>Dutiyanoceassādasutta</i> )	12
SN 35.19	Taking Pleasure (Interior) ( <i>Paṭhamābhinandasutta</i> )	12
SN 35.20	Taking Pleasure (Exterior) ( <i>Dutiyābhinandasutta</i> )	13
SN 35.21	The Arising of Suffering (Interior) ( <i>Paṭhamadukkhuṭṭhappādasutta</i> )	13
SN 35.22	The Arising of Suffering (Exterior) ( <i>Dutiyadukkhuṭṭhappādasutta</i> )	14

### ***The Chapter on the All***

SN 35.23	All ( <i>Sabbasutta</i> )	15
SN 35.24	Giving Up ( <i>Pahānasutta</i> )	15
SN 35.25	Giving Up By Direct Knowledge and Complete Understanding ( <i>Abhiññāpariññāpahānasutta</i> )	16
SN 35.26	Without Completely Understanding (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamaaparijānanasutta</i> )	17
SN 35.27	Without Completely Understanding (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyaaparijānanasutta</i> )	18
SN 35.28	Burning ( <i>Ādittasutta</i> )	19

SN 35.29	Oppressed ( <i>Addhabhūtasutta</i> )	20
SN 35.30	The Practice Fit for Uprooting ( <i>Samugghātasārappasutta</i> )	21
SN 35.31	The Practice Conducive to Uprooting (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamasamugghātasappāyasutta</i> )	22
SN 35.32	The Practice Conducive to Uprooting (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyasamugghātasappāyasutta</i> )	23

***The Chapter on Liable to Be Reborn***

SN 35.33–42	Ten on Liable to Be Reborn, Etc. ( <i>Jātidhammāsutta</i> )	26
-------------	--	----

***The Chapter on All is Impermanent***

SN 35.43–51	Nine on Impermanence, Etc. ( <i>Aniccādisuttanavaka</i> )	28
SN 35.52	Disturbed ( <i>Upasaṭṭhasutta</i> )	29

THE SECOND FIFTY

***The Chapter on Ignorance***

SN 35.53	Giving Up Ignorance ( <i>Avijjāpahānasutta</i> )	31
SN 35.54	Giving Up Fetters ( <i>Samyojanappahānasutta</i> )	32
SN 35.55	Uprooting the Fetters ( <i>Samyojanasamugghātasutta</i> )	32
SN 35.56	Giving Up Defilements ( <i>Āsavapahānasutta</i> )	32
SN 35.57	Uprooting Defilements ( <i>Āsavasamugghātasutta</i> )	32
SN 35.58	Giving Up Tendencies ( <i>Anusayapahānasutta</i> )	33
SN 35.59	Uprooting Tendencies ( <i>Anusayasamugghātasutta</i> )	33
SN 35.60	The Complete Understanding of All Grasping ( <i>Sabbupādānapariññāsutta</i> )	33
SN 35.61	The Depletion of All Fuel (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamasabbupādānapariyādānasutta</i> )	34

SN 35.62	The Depletion of All Fuel (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyasabbupādānapariyādānasutta</i> )	35
----------	--	----

***The Chapter with Migajāla***

SN 35.63	With Migajāla (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamamigajālasutta</i> )	37
SN 35.64	With Migajāla (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyamigajālasutta</i> )	38
SN 35.65	Samiddhi's Question About Māra ( <i>Paṭhamasamiddhimārapañhāsutta</i> )	39
SN 35.66	Samiddhi's Question About a Sentient Being ( <i>Samiddhisattapañhāsutta</i> )	40
SN 35.67	Samiddhi's Question About Suffering ( <i>Samiddhidukkhapañhāsutta</i> )	41
SN 35.68	Samiddhi's Question About the World ( <i>Samiddhilokapañhāsutta</i> )	41
SN 35.69	Upasena and the Viper ( <i>Upasenaāsivisasutta</i> )	41
SN 35.70	Upavāna on What is Apparent in This Very Life ( <i>Upavānasandiṭṭhikasutta</i> )	42
SN 35.71	Six Fields of Contact (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamachaphassāyatanasutta</i> )	44
SN 35.72	Six Fields of Contact (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyachaphassāyatanasutta</i> )	44
SN 35.73	Six Fields of Contact (3rd) ( <i>Tatiyachaphassāyatanasutta</i> )	45

***The Chapter on Sick***

SN 35.74	Sick (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamagilānasutta</i> )	47
SN 35.75	Sick (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyagilānasutta</i> )	49
SN 35.76	With Rādha on Impermanence ( <i>Rādhaaniccasutta</i> )	50
SN 35.77	With Rādha on Suffering ( <i>Rādhadukkkhasutta</i> )	51
SN 35.78	With Rādha on Not-Self ( <i>Rādhaanattasutta</i> )	51



SN 35.79	Giving Up Ignorance (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamaavijjāpahānasutta</i> )	51
SN 35.80	Giving Up Ignorance (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyaavijjāpahānasutta</i> )	52
SN 35.81	Several Mendicants ( <i>Sambahulabhikkhusutta</i> )	53
SN 35.82	A Question On the World ( <i>Lokapañhāsutta</i> )	54
SN 35.83	Phaggunā's Question ( <i>Phaggunapañhāsutta</i> )	55

### ***The Chapter with Channa***

SN 35.84	Liable to Wear Out ( <i>Palokadhammasutta</i> )	56
SN 35.85	The World is Empty ( <i>Suññatalokasutta</i> )	57
SN 35.86	A Teaching In Brief ( <i>Samkhittadhammasutta</i> )	57
SN 35.87	With Channa ( <i>Channasutta</i> )	59
SN 35.88	With Puṇṇa ( <i>Puṇṇasutta</i> )	62
SN 35.89	With Bāhiya ( <i>Bāhiyasutta</i> )	64
SN 35.90	Turbulence (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamaejāsutta</i> )	66
SN 35.91	Turbulence (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyaejāsutta</i> )	67
SN 35.92	A Duality (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamadvayasutta</i> )	68
SN 35.93	A Duality (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyadvayasutta</i> )	68

### ***The Chapter on the Sixes***

SN 35.94	Untamed, Unguarded ( <i>Adantaaguttasutta</i> )	70
SN 35.95	Mālunkyaputta ( <i>Mālunkyaputtasutta</i> )	72
SN 35.96	Liable to Decline ( <i>Parihānadhammasutta</i> )	78
SN 35.97	One Who Lives Negligently ( <i>Pamādavihārisutta</i> )	79
SN 35.98	Restraint ( <i>Samvarasutta</i> )	80
SN 35.99	Immersion ( <i>Samādhisutta</i> )	81
SN 35.100	Retreat ( <i>Paṭisallānasutta</i> )	82
SN 35.101	It's Not Yours (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamanatumhākasutta</i> )	82

SN 35.102	It's Not Yours (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyanatumhākasutta</i> )	83
SN 35.103	About Uddaka ( <i>Udakasutta</i> )	84

### THE THIRD FIFTY

#### ***The Chapter on Sanctuary***

SN 35.104	Sanctuary from the Yoke ( <i>Yogakkhemisutta</i> )	87
SN 35.105	Because of Grasping ( <i>Upādāyasutta</i> )	88
SN 35.106	The Origin of Suffering ( <i>Dukkhasamudayasutta</i> )	89
SN 35.107	The Origin of the World ( <i>Lokasamudayasutta</i> )	90
SN 35.108	I'm Better ( <i>Seyyohamasmisutta</i> )	91
SN 35.109	Things Prone to Being Fettered ( <i>Samyojaniyasutta</i> )	92
SN 35.110	Things Prone to Being Grasped ( <i>Upādāniyasutta</i> )	92
SN 35.111	Complete Understanding of the Interior ( <i>Ajjhattikāyatanaparijānanasutta</i> )	93
SN 35.112	Complete Understanding of the Exterior ( <i>Bāhirāyatanaparijānanasutta</i> )	93
SN 35.113	Listening In ( <i>Upassutisutta</i> )	94

#### ***The Chapter on the World and the Kinds of Sensual Stimulation***

SN 35.114	Māra's Snare (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamamārapāsasutta</i> )	96
SN 35.115	Māra's Snare (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyaṃmārapāsasutta</i> )	97
SN 35.116	Traveling to the End of the World ( <i>Lokantagamanasutta</i> )	98
SN 35.117	The Kinds of Sensual Stimulation ( <i>Kāmaguṇasutta</i> )	100
SN 35.118	The Question of Sakka ( <i>Sakkapañhasutta</i> )	103

SN 35.119	The Question of Pañcasikha ( <i>Pañcasikhasutta</i> )	104
SN 35.120	Sāriputta and the Pupil ( <i>Sāriputtasaddhivihārikasutta</i> )	105
SN 35.121	Advice to Rāhula ( <i>Rāhulovādasutta</i> )	106
SN 35.122	Things Prone to Being Fettered ( <i>Samyojanīyadhammasutta</i> )	109
SN 35.123	Things Prone to Being Grasped ( <i>Upādānīyadhammasutta</i> )	109

### ***The Chapter on Householders***

SN 35.124	At Vesālī ( <i>Vesālīsutta</i> )	111
SN 35.125	In the Land of the Vajjis ( <i>Vajjisutta</i> )	112
SN 35.126	At Nālandā ( <i>Nālandasutta</i> )	113
SN 35.127	With Bhāradvāja ( <i>Bhāradvājasutta</i> )	113
SN 35.128	With Soṇa ( <i>Soṇasutta</i> )	116
SN 35.129	With Ghosita ( <i>Ghositasutta</i> )	116
SN 35.130	With Hālidikāni ( <i>Hālidikānisutta</i> )	117
SN 35.131	Nakula's Father ( <i>Nakulapītusutta</i> )	118
SN 35.132	With Lohicca ( <i>Lohiccasutta</i> )	119
SN 35.133	Verahaccāni ( <i>Verahaccānisutta</i> )	123

### ***The Chapter at Devadaha***

SN 35.134	At Devadaha ( <i>Devadahasutta</i> )	125
SN 35.135	Opportunity ( <i>Khaṇasutta</i> )	126
SN 35.136	Liking Sights (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamarūpārāmasutta</i> )	127
SN 35.137	Liking Sights (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyaarūpārāmasutta</i> )	129
SN 35.138	Not Yours (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamanatumhākasutta</i> )	129
SN 35.139	Not Yours (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyanatumhākasutta</i> )	130
SN 35.140	Interior and Cause Are Impermanent ( <i>Ajjhattaaniccahetusutta</i> )	130

SN 35.141	Interior and Cause Are Suffering ( <i>Ajjhattadukkhahetusutta</i> )	131
SN 35.142	Interior and Cause Are Not-Self ( <i>Ajjhattānattahetusutta</i> )	131
SN 35.143	Exterior and Cause Are Impermanent ( <i>Bāhirāniccahetusutta</i> )	132
SN 35.144	Exterior and Cause Are Suffering ( <i>Bāhiradukkhahetusutta</i> )	132
SN 35.145	Exterior and Cause Are Not-Self ( <i>Bāhirānattahetusutta</i> )	133
<b><i>The Chapter on the Old and the New</i></b>		
SN 35.146	The Cessation of Action ( <i>Kammanirodhasutta</i> )	134
SN 35.147	The Impermanent as Conducive to Extinguishment ( <i>Aniccanibbānasappāyasutta</i> )	135
SN 35.148	The Suffering as Conducive to Extinguishment ( <i>Dukkhanibbānasappāyasutta</i> )	136
SN 35.149	Not-Self as Conducive to Extinguishment ( <i>Anattanibbānasappāyasutta</i> )	136
SN 35.150	A Practice Conducive to Extinguishment ( <i>Nibbānasappāyapaṭipadāsutta</i> )	137
SN 35.151	A Student ( <i>Antevāsikasutta</i> )	138
SN 35.152	What's the Purpose of the Spiritual Life? ( <i>Kimatthiyabrahmacariyasutta</i> )	139
SN 35.153	Is There a Method? ( <i>Atthinukhopariyāyasutta</i> )	140
SN 35.154	Endowed With Faculties ( <i>Indriyasampannasutta</i> )	142
SN 35.155	A Dhamma Speaker ( <i>Dhammakathikapucchasutta</i> )	142

## THE FOURTH FIFTY

### ***The Chapter on the End of Relishing***

SN 35.156	The Interior and the End of Relishing ( <i>Ajjhattanandikkhayasutta</i> )	145
SN 35.157	The Exterior and the End of Relishing ( <i>Bāhiraanandikkhayasutta</i> )	145
SN 35.158	Focus, the Interior, and the End of Relishing ( <i>Ajjhattaaniccanandikkhayasutta</i> )	146
SN 35.159	Focus, the Exterior, and the End of Relishing ( <i>Bāhiraaniccanandikkhayasutta</i> )	146
SN 35.160	On Immersion at Jīvaka's Mango Grove ( <i>Jivakambavanasamādhisutta</i> )	147
SN 35.161	On Retreat at Jīvaka's Mango Grove ( <i>Jivakambavanapaṭisallānasutta</i> )	147
SN 35.162	With Koṭṭhita on Impermanence ( <i>Koṭṭhikaanicasutta</i> )	148
SN 35.163	With Koṭṭhita on Suffering ( <i>Koṭṭhikadukkhassutta</i> )	149
SN 35.164	With Koṭṭhita on Not-Self ( <i>Koṭṭhikaanattasutta</i> )	149
SN 35.165	Giving Up Wrong View ( <i>Micchādiṭṭhipahānasutta</i> )	150
SN 35.166	Giving Up Substantialist View ( <i>Sakkāyadiṭṭhipahānasutta</i> )	150
SN 35.167	Giving Up View of Self ( <i>Attānudiṭṭhipahānasutta</i> )	151

### ***The Chapter on Sixty Abbreviated Texts***

SN 35.168	Desire for the Impermanent Interior ( <i>Ajjhattaaniccachandasutta</i> )	152
-----------	---	-----

SN 35.169	Greed for the Impermanent Interior ( <i>Ajjhattaaniccarāgasutta</i> )	152
SN 35.170	Desire and Greed for the Impermanent Interior ( <i>Ajjhattaaniccachandarāgasutta</i> )	153
SN 35.171–173	Desire, Etc. for the Suffering Interior ( <i>Dukkachandādisutta</i> )	153
SN 35.174–176	Desire, Etc. for the Not-Self Interior ( <i>Anattachandādisutta</i> )	153
SN 35.177–179	Desire, Etc. for the Impermanent Exterior ( <i>Bāhirāniccachandādisutta</i> )	153
SN 35.180–182	Desire, Etc. for the Suffering Exterior ( <i>Bāhiradukkachandādisutta</i> )	154
SN 35.183–185	Desire, Etc. for the Not-Self Exterior ( <i>Bāhirānattachandādisutta</i> )	154
SN 35.186	The Interior Was Impermanent in the Past ( <i>Ajjhattātītānīccasutta</i> )	154
SN 35.187	The Interior Will Be Impermanent in the Future ( <i>Ajjhattānāgatānīccasutta</i> )	155
SN 35.188	The Interior Is Impermanent in the Present ( <i>Ajjhattapaccuppannānīccasutta</i> )	155
SN 35.189–191	The Interior as Suffering in the Three Times ( <i>Ajjhattātītādidukkkhasutta</i> )	155
SN 35.192–194	The Interior as Not-Self in the Three Times ( <i>Ajjhattātītāadianattasutta</i> )	155
SN 35.195–197	The Exterior as Impermanent in the Three Times ( <i>Bāhirātītāadianīccasutta</i> )	156
SN 35.198–200	The Exterior as Suffering in the Three Times ( <i>Bāhirātītādidukkkhasutta</i> )	156
SN 35.201–203	The Exterior as Not-Self in the Three Times ( <i>Bāhirātītāadianattasutta</i> )	156
SN 35.204	The Interior and What's Impermanent in the Past ( <i>Ajjhattātītāyadanīccasutta</i> )	156

SN 35.205	The Interior and What's Impermanent in the Future ( <i>Ajjhattānāgatayadanिकासutta</i> )	157
SN 35.206	The Interior and What's Impermanent in the Present ( <i>Ajjhattapaccuppannayadanिकासutta</i> )	157
SN 35.207–209	The Interior and What's Suffering in the Three Times ( <i>Ajjhattātītādiyamdukkhasutta</i> )	157
SN 35.210–212	The Interior and What's Not-Self in the Three Times ( <i>Ajjhattātītādiyanattasutta</i> )	158
SN 35.213–215	The Exterior and What's Impermanent in the Three Times ( <i>Bāhirātītādiyanिकासutta</i> )	158
SN 35.216–218	The Exterior and What's Suffering in the Three Times ( <i>Bāhirātītādiyamdukkhasutta</i> )	158
SN 35.219–221	The Exterior and What's Not-Self in the Three Times ( <i>Bāhirātītādiyanattasutta</i> )	159
SN 35.222	The Interior as Impermanent ( <i>Ajjhattāyatanaanिकासutta</i> )	159
SN 35.223	The Interior as Suffering ( <i>Ajjhattāyanadukkkhasutta</i> )	159
SN 35.224	The Interior as Not-Self ( <i>Ajjhattāyatanaanattasutta</i> )	160
SN 35.225	The Exterior as Impermanent ( <i>Bāhirāyatanaanिकासutta</i> )	160
SN 35.226	The Exterior as Suffering ( <i>Bāhirāyanadukkkhasutta</i> )	160
SN 35.227	The Exterior as Not-Self ( <i>Bāhirāyatanaanattasutta</i> )	160

### ***The Chapter on the Ocean***

SN 35.228	The Ocean (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamasamuddasutta</i> )	162
SN 35.229	The Ocean (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyasamuddasutta</i> )	163
SN 35.230	The Simile of the Fisherman ( <i>Bāḷisikopamasutta</i> )	164
SN 35.231	The Simile of the Latex-Producing Tree ( <i>Khīrarukkhopamasutta</i> )	165
SN 35.232	With Koṭṭhita ( <i>Koṭṭhikasutta</i> )	167
SN 35.233	With Kāmabhū ( <i>Kāmabhūsutta</i> )	169
SN 35.234	With Udāyī ( <i>Udāyīsutta</i> )	170
SN 35.235	The Exposition on Burning ( <i>Ādittapariyāyasutta</i> )	171
SN 35.236	The Simile of Hands and Feet (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamahatthapādopamasutta</i> )	173
SN 35.237	The Simile of Hands and Feet (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyahatthapādopamasutta</i> )	174

### ***The Chapter on the Simile of the Vipers***

SN 35.238	The Simile of the Vipers ( <i>Āsivisopamasutta</i> )	175
SN 35.239	The Simile of the Chariot ( <i>Rathopamasutta</i> )	177
SN 35.240	The Simile of the Tortoise ( <i>Kummopamasutta</i> )	179
SN 35.241	The Simile of the Tree Trunk (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamadārukkhandhopamasutta</i> )	180
SN 35.242	The Simile of the Tree Trunk (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyadārukkhandhopamasutta</i> )	182
SN 35.243	The Explanation on the Corrupt ( <i>Avassutapariyāyasutta</i> )	183
SN 35.244	Entailing Suffering ( <i>Dukkhadhammasutta</i> )	187
SN 35.245	The Simile of the Parrot Tree ( <i>Kiṃsukopamasutta</i> )	190
SN 35.246	The Simile of the Harp ( <i>Vīṇopamasutta</i> )	192



SN 35.247	The Simile of Six Animals ( <i>Chappāṇakopamasutta</i> )	194
SN 35.248	The Sheaf of Barley ( <i>Yavakalāpisutta</i> )	197

## LINKED DISCOURSES ON FEELINGS

### ***The Chapter with Verses***

SN 36.1	Immersion ( <i>Samādhisutta</i> )	201
SN 36.2	Pleasure ( <i>Sukhasutta</i> )	201
SN 36.3	Giving Up ( <i>Pahānasutta</i> )	202
SN 36.4	The Abyss ( <i>Pātālasutta</i> )	203
SN 36.5	Should Be Seen ( <i>Daṭṭhabbasutta</i> )	204
SN 36.6	An Arrow ( <i>Sallasutta</i> )	205
SN 36.7	The Infirmary (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamagelaññasutta</i> )	207
SN 36.8	The Infirmary (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyaagelaññasutta</i> )	210
SN 36.9	Impermanent ( <i>Aniccassutta</i> )	212
SN 36.10	Rooted in Contact ( <i>Phassamūlakassutta</i> )	212

### ***The Chapter on In Private***

SN 36.11	In Private ( <i>Rahogatasutta</i> )	214
SN 36.12	In the Sky (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamaākāśasutta</i> )	216
SN 36.13	In the Sky (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyaākāśasutta</i> )	217
SN 36.14	A Guest House ( <i>Agārasutta</i> )	217
SN 36.15	With Ānanda (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamaānandasutta</i> )	217
SN 36.16	With Ānanda (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyaānandasutta</i> )	219
SN 36.17	With Several Mendicants (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamasambahulasutta</i> )	219
SN 36.18	With Several Mendicants (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyasambahulasutta</i> )	220
SN 36.19	With Pañcakaṅga ( <i>Pañcakaṅgasutta</i> )	221
SN 36.20	A Mendicant ( <i>Bhikkhusutta</i> )	224

***The Chapter on the Explanation of the Hundred and Eight***

SN 36.21	With Sīvaka ( <i>Sīvakasutta</i> )	226
SN 36.22	The Explanation of the Hundred and Eight ( <i>Aṭṭhasatasutta</i> )	227
SN 36.23	With a Mendicant ( <i>Aññatarabhikkhusutta</i> )	228
SN 36.24	Before ( <i>Pubbasutta</i> )	229
SN 36.25	Knowledge ( <i>Ñāṇasutta</i> )	229
SN 36.26	With Several Mendicants ( <i>Sambahulabhikkhusutta</i> )	230
SN 36.27	Ascetics and Brahmins (1st) ( <i>Paṭṭhamasamaṇabrāhmaṇasutta</i> )	230
SN 36.28	Ascetics and Brahmins (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyasamaṇabrāhmaṇasutta</i> )	231
SN 36.29	Ascetics and Brahmins (3rd) ( <i>Tatīyasamaṇabrāhmaṇasutta</i> )	231
SN 36.30	Plain Version ( <i>Suddhikasutta</i> )	232
SN 36.31	Not of the Flesh ( <i>Nirāmisasutta</i> )	232

**LINKED DISCOURSES ON FEMALES**

***First Chapter of Abbreviated Texts***

SN 37.1	A Female ( <i>Mātugāmasutta</i> )	236
SN 37.2	A Man ( <i>Purisasutta</i> )	236
SN 37.3	Particular Suffering ( <i>Āveṇikadukkhassutta</i> )	237
SN 37.4	Three Qualities ( <i>Tihidhammehisutta</i> )	237
SN 37.5	Irritable ( <i>Kodhanasutta</i> )	238
SN 37.6	Hostility ( <i>Upanāhīsutta</i> )	238
SN 37.7	Jealous ( <i>Issukīsutta</i> )	239
SN 37.8	Stingy ( <i>Maccharīsutta</i> )	239
SN 37.9	Adultery ( <i>Aticārīsutta</i> )	239
SN 37.10	Unethical ( <i>Dussīlasutta</i> )	239

SN 37.11	Unlearned ( <i>Appassutasutta</i> )	240
SN 37.12	Lazy ( <i>Kusītasutta</i> )	240
SN 37.13	Unmindful ( <i>Muṭṭhassatisutta</i> )	240
SN 37.14	Five Threats ( <i>Pañcaverasutta</i> )	240

### ***Second Chapter of Abbreviated Texts***

SN 37.15	Loving ( <i>Akkodhanasutta</i> )	241
SN 37.16	Free of Hostility ( <i>Anupanāhīsutta</i> )	242
SN 37.17	Free of Jealousy ( <i>Anissukīsutta</i> )	242
SN 37.18	Free of Stinginess ( <i>Amaccharīsutta</i> )	242
SN 37.19	Not Adulterous ( <i>Anaticārīsutta</i> )	242
SN 37.20	Ethical ( <i>Susīlasutta</i> )	243
SN 37.21	Very Learned ( <i>Bahussutasutta</i> )	243
SN 37.22	Energetic ( <i>Āraddhavīriyasutta</i> )	243
SN 37.23	Mindful ( <i>Upaṭṭhitassatisutta</i> )	243
SN 37.24	Five Precepts ( <i>Pañcasīlasutta</i> )	243

### ***The Chapter on Powers***

SN 37.25	Assured ( <i>Visāradasutta</i> )	245
SN 37.26	Under Her Thumb ( <i>Pasayhasutta</i> )	245
SN 37.27	Mastered ( <i>Abhibhuyyasutta</i> )	246
SN 37.28	One ( <i>Ekasutta</i> )	246
SN 37.29	In That Respect ( <i>Āṅgasutta</i> )	246
SN 37.30	They Send Her Away ( <i>Nāsentisutta</i> )	247
SN 37.31	Cause ( <i>Hetusutta</i> )	248
SN 37.32	Things ( <i>Ṭhānasutta</i> )	248
SN 37.33	Living With Self-Assurance ( <i>Pañcasīlavīsāradasutta</i> )	249
SN 37.34	Growth ( <i>Vaḍḍhīsutta</i> )	250

## LINKED DISCOURSES WITH JAMBUKHĀDAKA

### ***The Chapter with Jambukhādaka***

SN 38.1	A Question About Extinguishment ( <i>Nibbānapañhāsutta</i> )	252
SN 38.2	A Question About Perfection ( <i>Arahattapañhāsutta</i> )	253
SN 38.3	Principled Speech ( <i>Dhammavādīpañhāsutta</i> )	253
SN 38.4	What's the Purpose ( <i>Kimatthiyasutta</i> )	254
SN 38.5	Solace ( <i>Assāsappattasutta</i> )	254
SN 38.6	Ultimate Solace ( <i>Paramassāsappattasutta</i> )	255
SN 38.7	A Question About Feeling ( <i>Vedanāpañhāsutta</i> )	255
SN 38.8	A Question About Defilements ( <i>Āsavapañhāsutta</i> )	256
SN 38.9	A Question About Ignorance ( <i>Avijjāpañhāsutta</i> )	256
SN 38.10	A Question About Craving ( <i>Taṇhāpañhāsutta</i> )	256
SN 38.11	A Question About Floods ( <i>Oghapañhāsutta</i> )	257
SN 38.12	A Question About Grasping ( <i>Upādānapañhāsutta</i> )	257
SN 38.13	A Question About States of Existence ( <i>Bhavapañhāsutta</i> )	258
SN 38.14	A Question About Suffering ( <i>Dukkhapañhāsutta</i> )	258
SN 38.15	A Question About Substantial Reality ( <i>Sakkāyapañhāsutta</i> )	258
SN 38.16	A Question About What's Hard to Do ( <i>Dukkarapañhāsutta</i> )	259

## LINKED DISCOURSES WITH SĀMAṆḌAKA

### ***The Chapter with Sāmaṇḍaka***

SN 39.1–15	With Sāmaṇḍaka on Extinguishment ( <i>Sāmaṇḍakasutta</i> )	261
SN 39.16	Hard to Do ( <i>Dukkarasutta</i> )	262

## LINKED DISCOURSES WITH MOGGALLĀNA

### ***The Chapter with Moggallāna***

SN 40.1	A Question About the First Absorption ( <i>Paṭhamajhānapañhāsutta</i> )	264
SN 40.2	A Question About the Second Absorption ( <i>Dutiyajhānapañhāsutta</i> )	265
SN 40.3	A Question About the Third Absorption ( <i>Tatijhānapañhāsutta</i> )	266
SN 40.4	A Question About the Fourth Absorption ( <i>Catutthajhānapañhāsutta</i> )	266
SN 40.5	A Question About the Dimension of Infinite Space ( <i>Ākāsānañcāyatanapañhāsutta</i> )	267
SN 40.6	A Question About the Dimension of Infinite Consciousness ( <i>Viññāṇañcāyatanapañhāsutta</i> )	268
SN 40.7	A Question About the Dimension of Nothingness ( <i>Ākiñcaññāyatanapañhāsutta</i> )	269
SN 40.8	A Question About the Dimension of Neither Perception Nor Non-Perception ( <i>Nevasaññānāsaññāyatanapañhāsutta</i> )	269
SN 40.9	A Question About the Signless ( <i>Animittapañhāsutta</i> )	270
SN 40.10	With Sakka ( <i>Sakkasutta</i> )	271
SN 40.11	With Candana, Etc. ( <i>Candanasutta</i> )	274

## LINKED DISCOURSES WITH CITTA THE HOUSEHOLDER

### ***The Chapter with Citta***

SN 41.1	The Fetter ( <i>Samyojanasutta</i> )	276
SN 41.2	Isidatta (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamaisidattasutta</i> )	277
SN 41.3	With Isidatta (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyaaisidattasutta</i> )	279
SN 41.4	Mahaka's Demonstration ( <i>Mahakapāṭihāriyasutta</i> )	282
SN 41.5	With Kāmabhū (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamakāmabhūsutta</i> )	283
SN 41.6	With Kāmabhū (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyakāmabhūsutta</i> )	285
SN 41.7	With Godatta ( <i>Godattasutta</i> )	288
SN 41.8	The Jain Ascetic of the Ñātika Clan ( <i>Nigaṇṭhanāṭaputtasutta</i> )	290
SN 41.9	With Kassapa, the Naked Ascetic ( <i>Acelakassapasutta</i> )	292
SN 41.10	Seeing the Sick ( <i>Gilānadassanasutta</i> )	294

## LINKED DISCOURSES WITH CHIEFS

### ***The Chapter on Chiefs***

SN 42.1	Vicious ( <i>Caṇḍasutta</i> )	297
SN 42.2	With Tālapuṭa ( <i>Tālapuṭasutta</i> )	298
SN 42.3	A Warrior ( <i>Yodhājīvasutta</i> )	300
SN 42.4	An Elephant Warrior ( <i>Haṭṭhārohasutta</i> )	301
SN 42.5	A Cavalryman ( <i>Assārohasutta</i> )	301
SN 42.6	With Asibandhaka's Son ( <i>Asibandhakaputtasutta</i> )	302
SN 42.7	The Simile of the Field ( <i>Khettūpamasutta</i> )	304
SN 42.8	A Horn Blower ( <i>Saṅkhadhamasutta</i> )	306
SN 42.9	Families ( <i>Kulasutta</i> )	309
SN 42.10	With Maṇicūḷaka ( <i>Maṇicūḷakasutta</i> )	311

SN 42.11	With Bhadraka ( <i>Bhadrakasutta</i> )	312
SN 42.12	With Rāsiya ( <i>Rāsiyasutta</i> )	314
SN 42.13	With Pāṭaliya ( <i>Pāṭaliyasutta</i> )	321

## LINKED DISCOURSES ON THE UNCONDITIONED

### **Chapter One**

SN 43.1	Mindfulness of the Body ( <i>Kāyagatāsatisutta</i> )	333
SN 43.2	Serenity and Discernment ( <i>Samathavipassanāsutta</i> )	333
SN 43.3	Placing the Mind and Keeping it Connected ( <i>Savitakkasavicārasutta</i> )	334
SN 43.4	Emptiness Immersion ( <i>Suññatasamādhisutta</i> )	334
SN 43.5	Mindfulness Meditation ( <i>Satipaṭṭhānasutta</i> )	334
SN 43.6	Right Efforts ( <i>Sammappadhānasutta</i> )	335
SN 43.7	Bases of Psychic Power ( <i>Iddhipādasutta</i> )	335
SN 43.8	Faculties ( <i>Indriyasutta</i> )	335
SN 43.9	Powers ( <i>Balasutta</i> )	335
SN 43.10	Awakening Factors ( <i>Bojjhaṅgasutta</i> )	336
SN 43.11	The Path ( <i>Maggaṅgasutta</i> )	336

### **Chapter Two**

SN 43.12	The Unconditioned ( <i>Asaṅkhatasutta</i> )	337
SN 43.13	Uninclined ( <i>Anatasutta</i> )	339
SN 43.14–43	Undefiled, Etc. ( <i>Anāsavādisutta</i> )	339
SN 43.44	The Haven ( <i>Parāyanasutta</i> )	340

## LINKED DISCOURSES ON THE UNDECLARED

### **The Chapter on the Undeclared Points**

SN 44.1	With Khemā ( <i>Khemāsutta</i> )	343
SN 44.2	With Anurādha ( <i>Anurādhasutta</i> )	346

SN 44.3	With Sāriputta and Koṭṭhita (1st) ( <i>Paṭhamasāriputtakotṭhikasutta</i> )	349
SN 44.4	With Sāriputta and Koṭṭhita (2nd) ( <i>Dutiyasāriputtakotṭhikasutta</i> )	350
SN 44.5	With Sāriputta and Koṭṭhita (3rd) ( <i>Tatīyasāriputtakotṭhikasutta</i> )	351
SN 44.6	With Sāriputta and Koṭṭhita (4th) ( <i>Catutthasāriputtakotṭhikasutta</i> )	351
SN 44.7	With Moggallāna ( <i>Moggallānasutta</i> )	353
SN 44.8	With Vacchagotta ( <i>Vacchagottasutta</i> )	355
SN 44.9	The Debating Hall ( <i>Kutūhalasālāsutta</i> )	356
SN 44.10	With Ānanda ( <i>Ānandasutta</i> )	358
SN 44.11	With Sabhiya Kaccāna ( <i>Sabhiyakaccānasutta</i> )	359
Colophon		361



# LINKED DISCOURSES ON THE SIX SENSE FIELDS

# *THE FIRST FIFTY*

# The Chapter on Impermanence

SN 35.1

## The Interior as Impermanent

*Ajjhattānīccasutta*

So I have heard. At one time the Buddha was staying near Sāvatthī 1.1  
in Jeta's Grove, Anāthapiṇḍika's monastery. There the Buddha  
addressed the mendicants, "Mendicants!"

"Venerable sir," they replied. The Buddha said this: 1.5

"Mendicants, the eye is impermanent. What's impermanent is 2.1  
suffering. What's suffering is not-self. And what's not-self should  
be truly seen with right understanding like this: 'This is not mine,  
I am not this, this is not my self.'

The ear is impermanent. ... 2.5

The nose is impermanent. ... 2.7

The tongue is impermanent. ... 2.9

The body is impermanent. ... 2.13

The mind is impermanent. What's impermanent is suffering. 2.15  
What's suffering is not-self. And what's not-self should be truly  
seen with right understanding like this: 'This is not mine, I am not  
this, this is not my self.'

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with 2.19  
the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind. Being disillusioned,

desire fades away. When desire fades away they're freed. When they're freed, they know they're freed.

- 2.21 They understand: 'Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.'

## SN 35.2

### The Interior as Suffering

*Ajjhattadukkkhasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, the eye is suffering. What's suffering is not-self. And what's not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: 'This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.'
- 1.4 The ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are suffering. What's suffering is not-self. And what's not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: 'This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.'
- 1.11 Seeing this ... They understand: '... there is no return to any state of existence.'

## SN 35.3

### The Interior as Not-Self

*Ajjhattānattasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, the eye is not-self. And what's not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: 'This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.'
- 1.3 The ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are not-self. And what's not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: 'This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.'
- 1.9 Seeing this ... They understand: '... there is no return to any state of existence.'

SN 35.4

## The Exterior as Impermanent

*Bāhirāniccasutta*

“Mendicants, sights are impermanent. What’s impermanent is suffering. What’s suffering is not-self. And what’s not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’ 1.1

Sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are impermanent. 1.5  
What’s impermanent is suffering. What’s suffering is not-self. And what’s not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. 1.13  
When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.

They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’ 1.15

SN 35.5

## The Exterior as Suffering

*Bāhiradukkkhasutta*

“Mendicants, sights are suffering. What’s suffering is not-self. And what’s not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’ ...” 1.1

SN 35.6

## The Exterior as Not-Self

*Bāhirānattasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, sights are not-self. And what’s not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’ ...”

SN 35.7

## The Interior as Impermanent in the Three Times

*Ajjhattāniccātītānāgatasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, the eye of the past and future is impermanent, let alone the present.
- 1.3 Seeing this, a learned noble disciple doesn’t worry about the eye of the past, they don’t look forward to enjoying the eye in the future, and they practice for disillusionment, dispassion, and cessation regarding the eye in the present.
- 1.6 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind of the past and future is impermanent, let alone the present.
- 1.16 Seeing this, a learned noble disciple doesn’t worry about the mind of the past, they don’t look forward to enjoying the mind in the future, and they practice for disillusionment, dispassion, and cessation regarding the mind in the present.”

SN 35.8

## The Interior as Suffering in the Three Times

*Ajjhattadukkhātītānāgatasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, the eye of the past and future is suffering, let alone the present.

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple doesn't worry about the eye of the past, they don't look forward to enjoying the eye in the future, and they practice for disillusionment, dispassion, and cessation regarding the eye in the present. ...” 1.3

SN 35.9

## The Interior as Not-Self in the Three Times

*Ajjhattānattātītānāgatasutta*

“Mendicants, the eye of the past and future is not-self, let alone the present. 1.1

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple doesn't worry about the eye of the past, they don't look forward to enjoying the eye in the future, and they practice for disillusionment, dispassion, and cessation regarding the eye in the present. ...” 1.3

SN 35.10

## The Exterior as Impermanent in the Three Times

*Bāhirāniccātītānāgatasutta*

“Mendicants, sights of the past and future are impermanent, let alone the present. ...” 1.1

SN 35.11

## The Exterior as Suffering in the Three Times

*Bāhiradukkhātītānāgatasutta*

“Mendicants, sights of the past and future are suffering, let alone the present. ...” 1.1

SN 35.12

## The Exterior as Not-Self in the Three Times

*Bāhirānattātītānāgatasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, sights of the past and future are not-self, let alone the present. ...”



# The Chapter on Pairs

SN 35.13

## Before My Awakening (Interior)

*Paṭhamapubbesambodhasutta*

At Sāvattthī.

1.1

“Mendicants, before my awakening—when I was still unawakened but intent on awakening—I thought: ‘What’s the gratification, the drawback, and the escape when it comes to the eye ... ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... and mind?’

Then it occurred to me: ‘The pleasure and happiness that arise from the eye: this is its gratification. That the eye is impermanent, suffering, and perishable: this is its drawback. Removing and giving up desire and greed for the eye: this is its escape.

The pleasure and happiness that arise from the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind: this is its gratification. That the mind is impermanent, suffering, and perishable: this is its drawback. Removing and giving up desire and greed for the mind: this is its escape.’

As long as I didn’t truly understand these six interior sense fields’ gratification, drawback, and escape in this way for what they are, I didn’t announce my supreme perfect awakening in this world with its gods, Māras, and Brahmās, this population with its ascetics and brahmins, its gods and humans.

But when I did truly understand these six interior sense fields’ gratification, drawback, and escape in this way for what they are, I

announced my supreme perfect awakening in this world with its gods, Māras, and Brahmās, this population with its ascetics and brahmins, its gods and humans.

- 2.3 Knowledge and vision arose in me: ‘My freedom is unshakable; this is my last rebirth; now there’ll be no more future lives.’”

SN 35.14

## Before My Awakening (Exterior)

*Dutiyapubbesambodhasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, before my awakening—when I was still unawakened but intent on awakening—I thought: ‘What’s the gratification, the drawback, and the escape when it comes to sights ... sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... and ideas?’ ...”

SN 35.15

## In Search of Gratification (Interior)

*Paṭhamaassādapariyesanasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, I went in search of the eye’s gratification, and I found it. I’ve seen clearly with wisdom the full extent of the eye’s gratification. I went in search of the eye’s drawback, and I found it. I’ve seen clearly with wisdom the full extent of the eye’s drawback. I went in search of escape from the eye, and I found it. I’ve seen clearly with wisdom the full extent of escape from the eye.
- 1.10 I went in search of the ear’s . . . nose’s . . . tongue’s . . . body’s . . . mind’s gratification, and I found it. I’ve seen clearly with wisdom the full extent of the mind’s gratification. I went in search of the mind’s drawback, and I found it. I’ve seen clearly with wisdom the full extent of the mind’s drawback. I went in search of escape from the mind, and I found it. I’ve seen clearly with wisdom the full extent of escape from the mind.

As long as I didn't truly understand these six interior sense fields' 2.1  
gratification, drawback, and escape for what they are, I didn't announce my supreme perfect awakening ...

But when I did truly understand ... 2.2

Knowledge and vision arose in me: 'My freedom is unshakable; 2.3  
this is my last rebirth; now there'll be no more future lives.'"

SN 35.16

## In Search of Gratification (Exterior)

*Dutiyaassādapariyesanasutta*

"Mendicants, I went in search of the gratification of sights, and I 1.1  
found it. ..."

SN 35.17

## If There Were No Gratification (Interior)

*Paṭhamanoceassādasutta*

"Mendicants, if there were no gratification in the eye, sentient beings 1.1  
wouldn't be aroused by it. But since there is gratification in the eye, sentient beings are aroused by it. If the eye had no drawback, sentient beings wouldn't grow disillusioned with it. But since the eye has a drawback, sentient beings do grow disillusioned with it. If there were no escape from the eye, sentient beings wouldn't escape from it. But since there is an escape from the eye, sentient beings do escape from it.

If there were no gratification in the ear ... nose ... tongue ... 1.7  
body ... mind, sentient beings wouldn't be aroused by it. But since there is gratification in the mind, sentient beings are aroused by it. If the mind had no drawback, sentient beings wouldn't grow disillusioned with it. But since the mind has a drawback, sentient beings do grow disillusioned with it. If there were no escape from

the mind, sentient beings wouldn't escape from it. But since there is an escape from the mind, sentient beings do escape from it.

- 2.1 As long as sentient beings don't truly understand these six interior sense fields' gratification, drawback, and escape for what they are, they haven't escaped from this world—with its gods, Māras, and Brahmās, this population with its ascetics and brahmins, its gods and humans—and they don't live detached, liberated, with a mind free of limits.
- 2.2 But when sentient beings truly understand these six interior sense fields' gratification, drawback, and escape for what they are, they've escaped from this world—with its gods, Māras, and Brahmās, this population with its ascetics and brahmins, its gods and humans—and they live detached, liberated, with a mind free of limits.”

SN 35.18

## If There Were No Gratification (Exterior)

*Dutiyañoceassādasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, if there were no gratification in sights, sentient beings wouldn't be aroused by them. ...”

SN 35.19

## Taking Pleasure (Interior)

*Paṭhamābhinandasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, if you take pleasure in the eye, you take pleasure in suffering. If you take pleasure in suffering, I say you're not exempt from suffering.
- 1.3 If you take pleasure in the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, you take pleasure in suffering. If you take pleasure in suffering, I say you're not exempt from suffering.

If you don't take pleasure in the eye, you don't take pleasure in suffering. If you don't take pleasure in suffering, I say you're exempt from suffering. 2.1

If you don't take pleasure in the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, you don't take pleasure in suffering. If you don't take pleasure in suffering, I say you're exempt from suffering." 2.3

SN 35.20

## Taking Pleasure (Exterior)

*Dutiyābhinandasutta*

"Mendicants, if you take pleasure in sights, you take pleasure in suffering. If you take pleasure in suffering, I say you're not exempt from suffering. ..."

SN 35.21

## The Arising of Suffering (Interior)

*Paṭhamadukkhuppādasutta*

"Mendicants, the arising, continuation, rebirth, and manifestation of the eye is the arising of suffering, the continuation of diseases, and the manifestation of old age and death. The arising, continuation, rebirth, and manifestation of the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... and mind is the arising of suffering, the continuation of diseases, and the manifestation of old age and death. 1.1

The cessation, settling, and ending of the eye is the cessation of suffering, the settling of diseases, and the ending of old age and death. The cessation, settling, and ending of the ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind is the cessation of suffering, the settling of diseases, and the ending of old age and death." 2.1

SN 35.22

## The Arising of Suffering (Exterior)

*Dutiyaḍukkhuppādasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, the arising, continuation, rebirth, and manifestation of sights is the arising of suffering, the continuation of diseases, and the manifestation of old age and death. The arising, continuation, rebirth, and manifestation of sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas is the arising of suffering, the continuation of diseases, and the manifestation of old age and death.
- 2.1 The cessation, settling, and ending of sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas is the cessation of suffering, the settling of diseases, and the ending of old age and death.”

# The Chapter on the All

SN 35.23

All

*Sabbasutta*

At Sāvatthī. 1.1

“Mendicants, I will teach you the all. Listen ... 1.2

And what is the all? It’s just the eye and sights, the ear and 1.4  
sounds, the nose and smells, the tongue and tastes, the body and  
touches, and the mind and ideas. This is called the all.

Mendicants, suppose someone was to say: ‘I’ll reject this all and 1.7  
describe another all.’ They’d have no grounds for that, they’d be  
stumped by questions, and, in addition, they’d get frustrated. Why  
is that? Because they’re out of their element.”

SN 35.24

Giving Up

*Pahānasutta*

“Mendicants, I will teach you the principle for giving up the all. 1.1  
Listen ...

And what is the principle for giving up the all? The eye should 1.3  
be given up. Sights should be given up. Eye consciousness should  
be given up. Eye contact should be given up. The painful, pleasant,

or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact should also be given up.

- 1.5 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind should be given up. Ideas should be given up. Mind consciousness should be given up. Mind contact should be given up. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact should be given up.
- 1.9 This is the principle for giving up the all.”

SN 35.25

## Giving Up By Direct Knowledge and Complete Understanding

*Abhiññāpariññāpahānasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, I will teach you the principle for giving up the all by direct knowledge and complete understanding. Listen ...
- 1.3 And what is the principle for giving up the all by direct knowledge and complete understanding? The eye should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding. Sights should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding. Eye consciousness should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding. Eye contact should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding.
- 1.5 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding. Ideas should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding. Mind consciousness should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding. Mind contact should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact should be given up by direct knowledge and complete understanding.



This is the principle for giving up the all by direct knowledge and complete understanding.” 1.9

SN 35.26

## Without Completely Understanding (1st)

*Paṭhamaaparijānanasutta*

“Mendicants, without directly knowing and completely understanding the all, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering. And what is the all, without directly knowing and completely understanding which, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering? 1.1

Without directly knowing and completely understanding the eye, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering. Without directly knowing and completely understanding sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact ... painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering. 1.3

Without directly knowing and completely understanding the ear ... the nose ... the tongue ... the body ... the mind, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering. Without directly knowing and completely understanding ideas ... mind consciousness ... mind contact ... painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering. 1.8

This is the all, without directly knowing and completely understanding which, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering. 1.19

By directly knowing and completely understanding the all, having dispassion for it and giving it up, you can end suffering. And what is the all, directly knowing and completely understanding which, having dispassion for it and giving it up, you can end suffering? 2.1

- 2.3 By directly knowing and completely understanding the eye ... the ear ... the nose ... the tongue ... the body ... the mind, having dispassion for it and giving it up, you can end suffering. By directly knowing and completely understanding ideas ... mind consciousness ... mind contact ... painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact, having dispassion for it and giving it up, you can end suffering.
- 2.19 This is the all, directly knowing and completely understanding which, having dispassion for it and giving it up, you can end suffering.”

SN 35.27

## Without Completely Understanding (2nd)

*Dutiyaaparijānanasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, without directly knowing and completely understanding the all, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering. And what is the all, without directly knowing and completely understanding which, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering?
- 1.3 The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and things known by eye consciousness.
- 1.4 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...
- 1.6 The mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and things known by mind consciousness.
- 1.7 This is the all, without directly knowing and completely understanding which, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can’t end suffering.
- 2.1 By directly knowing and completely understanding the all, having dispassion for it and giving it up, you can end suffering. And what is the all, directly knowing and completely understanding which, having dispassion for it and giving it up, you can end suffering?

The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and things known by eye 2.3  
consciousness.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... 2.4

The mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and things known by 2.6  
mind consciousness.

This is the all, directly knowing and completely understand- 2.7  
ing which, having dispassion for it and giving it up, you can end  
suffering.”

SN 35.28

## Burning

*Ādittasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Gayā on Gayā Head 1.1  
together with a thousand mendicants. There the Buddha addressed  
the mendicants:

“Mendicants, all is burning. And what is the all that is burning? 1.3

The eye is burning. Sights are burning. Eye consciousness is 1.5  
burning. Eye contact is burning. The painful, pleasant, or neutral  
feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also burning. Burn-  
ing with what? Burning with the fires of greed, hate, and delusion.  
Burning with rebirth, old age, and death, with sorrow, lamentation,  
pain, sadness, and distress.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... 1.8

The mind is burning. Thoughts are burning. Mind conscious- 1.11  
ness is burning. Mind contact is burning. The painful, pleasant, or  
neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also burn-  
ing. Burning with what? Burning with the fires of greed, hate, and  
delusion. Burning with rebirth, old age, and death, with sorrow,  
lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress, I say.

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with 1.14  
the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact. And they grow  
disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises  
conditioned by eye contact.

- 1.15 They grow disillusioned with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact.
- 1.16 Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they're freed. When they're freed, they know they're freed.
- 1.17 They understand: 'Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.'
- 2.1 That is what the Buddha said. Satisfied, the mendicants approved what the Buddha said. And while this discourse was being spoken, the minds of the thousand mendicants were freed from defilements by not grasping.

SN 35.29

## Oppressed

*Addhabhūtasutta*

- 1.1 SO I HAVE HEARD. At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha, in the Bamboo Grove, the squirrels' feeding ground. There the Buddha addressed the mendicants:
- 1.4 "Mendicants, all is oppressed. And what is the all that is oppressed?
- 1.6 The eye is oppressed. Sight is oppressed. Eye consciousness is oppressed. Eye contact is oppressed. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also oppressed. Oppressed by what? Oppressed by the fires of greed, hate, and delusion. Oppressed by rebirth, old age, and death, by sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress, I say.
- 1.9 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is oppressed. Ideas are oppressed. Mind consciousness is oppressed. Mind contact is oppressed. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also oppressed. Oppressed by what? Oppressed by greed, hate, and delusion. Oppressed by

rebirth, old age, and death, by sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress, I say.

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact. And they grow disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact. 1.16

They grow disillusioned with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they're freed. When they're freed, they know they're freed. 1.17

They understand: 'Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.' 1.19

SN 35.30

## The Practice Fit for Uprooting

*Samugghātasārappasutta*

"Mendicants, I will teach you the practice fit for uprooting all conceiving. Listen and apply your mind well, I will speak. ... 1.1

And what is the practice fit for uprooting all conceiving? 1.3

It's when a mendicant does not conceive anything to be the eye, does not conceive it in the eye, does not conceive it as the eye, and does not conceive that 'the eye is mine.' They don't conceive anything to be sights, they don't conceive it in sights, they don't conceive it as sights, and they don't conceive that 'sights are mine.' They don't conceive eye consciousness ... eye contact ... They don't conceive anything to be the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact. They don't conceive it in that, they don't conceive it as that, and they don't conceive that 'that is mine.' 1.4

They don't conceive anything to be the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... They don't conceive anything to be the pleasant, 1.9

painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact. They don't conceive it in that, they don't conceive it as that, and they don't conceive that 'that is mine.'

- 1.19 They don't conceive anything to be all, they don't conceive it in all, they don't conceive it as all, and they don't conceive that 'all is mine.' Not conceiving, they don't grasp at anything in the world. Not grasping, they're not anxious. Not being anxious, they personally become extinguished.
- 1.22 They understand: 'Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.'
- 1.23 This is the practice fit for uprooting all conceiving."

### SN 35.31

## The Practice Conducive to Uprooting (1st)

*Paṭhamasamugghātasappāyasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, I will teach you the practice that's conducive to uprooting all conceiving. Listen ...
- 1.3 And what is the practice that's conducive to uprooting all conceiving? It's when a mendicant does not conceive anything to be the eye, does not conceive it in the eye, does not conceive it as the eye, and does not conceive that 'the eye is mine.' They don't conceive anything to be sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact. And they don't conceive anything to be the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact. They don't conceive it in that, they don't conceive it as that, and they don't conceive that 'that is mine.'
- 1.7 For whatever you conceive it to be, whatever you conceive it in, whatever you conceive it as, and whatever you conceive to be 'mine': that becomes something else. The world is attached to being, taking pleasure only in being, yet it becomes something else.

They don't conceive anything to be the ear ... nose ... tongue ... 1.9  
body ... mind ... They don't conceive anything to be the pleasant,  
painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact.  
They don't conceive it in that, they don't conceive it as that, and  
they don't conceive that 'that is mine.'

For whatever you conceive it to be, whatever you conceive it 1.19  
in, whatever you conceive it as, and whatever you conceive to be  
'mine': that becomes something else. The world is attached to  
being, taking pleasure only in being, yet it becomes something  
else.

As far as the aggregates, elements, and sense fields extend, they 1.21  
don't conceive anything to be that, they don't conceive it in that,  
they don't conceive it as that, and they don't conceive that 'that is  
mine.' Not conceiving, they don't grasp at anything in the world.  
Not grasping, they're not anxious. Not being anxious, they person-  
ally become extinguished.

They understand: 'Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has 1.24  
been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no  
return to any state of existence.'

This is the practice that's conducive to uprooting all conceiving." 1.25

SN 35.32

## The Practice Conducive to Uprooting (2nd)

*Dutiyasamugghātasappāyasutta*

"Mendicants, I will teach you the practice that's conducive to up- 1.1  
rooting all conceiving. Listen ...

And what is the practice that's conducive to uprooting all con- 1.3  
ceiving?

What do you think, mendicants? Is the eye permanent or im- 2.1  
permanent?"

"Impermanent, sir." 3.1

"But if it's impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?" 4.1

"Suffering, sir." 5.1

- 6.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”
- 7.1 “No, sir.”
- 8.1 “Are sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact ...
- 10.1 The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact: is that permanent or impermanent?”
- 11.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 12.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 13.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 14.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”
- 15.1 “No, sir.” ...
- 16.1 “Is the ear ... nose ... tongue ...
- 20.1 body ... mind ...
- 22.1 The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact: is that permanent or impermanent?”
- 23.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 24.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 25.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 26.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”
- 27.1 “No, sir.”
- 28.1 “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact. And they grow disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact.
- 28.3 They grow disillusioned with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... They grow disillusioned with the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact. And they grow disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact.
- 28.6 Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.



They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has 28.7  
been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no  
return to any state of existence.’ This is the practice that’s conducive  
to uprooting all conceiving.”

# The Chapter on Liable to Be Reborn

SN 35.33–42

Ten on Liable to Be Reborn, Etc.

*Jātidhammāsutta*

1.1 At Sāvatthī.

1.3 “Mendicants, all is liable to be reborn. And what is the all that is liable to be reborn? The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are liable to be reborn. And the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also liable to be reborn.

1.10 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... The mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact are liable to be reborn. And the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also liable to be reborn.

1.18 Seeing this a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any state of existence.’”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is liable to grow old. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is liable to fall sick. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is liable to die. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is liable to sorrow. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is liable to be corrupted. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is liable to end. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is liable to vanish. ...”

“Mendicants, all is liable to originate. ...”	1.1
“Mendicants, all is liable to cease. ...”	1.1

# The Chapter on All is Impermanent

SN 35.43–51

## Nine on Impermanence, Etc.

*Aniccādisuttanavaka*

1.1 At Sāvatthī.

1.3 “Mendicants, all is impermanent. And what is the all that is impermanent? The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are impermanent. And the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also impermanent.

1.7 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... The mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact are impermanent. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also impermanent.

1.12 Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned ...

1.17 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is suffering. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is not-self. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is to be directly known. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is to be completely understood. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is to be given up. ...”

1.1 “Mendicants, all is to be realized. ...”

“Mendicants, all is to be directly known and completely understood. ...” 1.1

“Mendicants, all is troubled. ...” 1.1

SN 35.52

## Disturbed

*Upassaṭṭhasutta*

“Mendicants, all is disturbed. And what is the all that is disturbed? 1.1  
The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are disturbed.  
And the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned  
by eye contact is also disturbed.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... 1.5

The mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact are 1.8  
disturbed. And the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises  
conditioned by mind contact is also disturbed.

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned ... 1.10

They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has 1.15  
been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no  
return to any state of existence.’”

*THE SECOND FIFTY*

# The Chapter on Ignorance

SN 35.53

## Giving Up Ignorance

*Avijjāpahānasutta*

At Sāvattthī.

1.1

Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him: 1.2

“Sir, how does one know and see so as to give up ignorance and give rise to knowledge?” 1.3

“Mendicant, knowing and seeing the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact as impermanent, ignorance is given up and knowledge arises. And also knowing and seeing the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact as impermanent, ignorance is given up and knowledge arises. 2.1

Knowing and seeing the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... 2.6

Knowing and seeing the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact as impermanent, ignorance is given up and knowledge arises. And also knowing and seeing the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact as impermanent, ignorance is given up and knowledge arises. 2.10

That’s how to know and see so as to give up ignorance and give rise to knowledge.” 2.15

SN 35.54

## Giving Up Fetters

*Samyojanappahānasutta*

- 1.1 “Sir, how does one know and see so that the fetters are given up?”
- 1.2 “Mendicant, knowing and seeing the eye as impermanent, the fetters are given up ...”

SN 35.55

## Uprooting the Fetters

*Samyojanasamugghātasutta*

- 1.1 “Sir, how does one know and see so that the fetters are uprooted?”
- 1.2 “Mendicant, knowing and seeing the eye as not-self, the fetters are uprooted ...”

SN 35.56

## Giving Up Defilements

*Āsavapahānasutta*

- 1.1 “Sir, how does one know and see so that the defilements are given up?” ...

SN 35.57

## Uprooting Defilements

*Āsavaśamugghātasutta*

- 1.1 “Sir, how does one know and see so that the defilements are uprooted?” ...



SN 35.58

## Giving Up Tendencies

*Anusayapahānasutta*

“Sir, how does one know and see so that the underlying tendencies 1.1  
are given up?” ...

SN 35.59

## Uprooting Tendencies

*Anusayasamugghātasutta*

“Sir, how does one know and see so that the underlying tendencies 1.1  
are uprooted?” ...

SN 35.60

## The Complete Understanding of All Grasping

*Sabbupādānapariññāsutta*

“Mendicants, I will teach you the principle for the complete under- 1.1  
standing of all grasping. Listen ...

And what is the principle for the complete understanding of all 1.3  
grasping?

Eye consciousness arises dependent on the eye and sights. The 1.4  
meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling.

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with 1.6  
the eye, sights, eye consciousness, eye contact, and feeling. Being  
disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re  
freed. When they are released, they understand: ‘I have completely  
understood grasping.’

Ear consciousness arises dependent on the ear and sounds. ... 1.8

Nose consciousness arises dependent on the nose and smells. 1.9

...

- 1.10 Tongue consciousness arises dependent on the tongue and tastes. ...
- 1.11 Body consciousness arises dependent on the body and touches. ...
- 1.12 Mind consciousness arises dependent on the mind and ideas. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling.
- 1.14 Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, mind contact, and feeling. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they're freed. When they are released, they understand: 'I have completely understood grasping.'
- 1.16 This is the principle for the complete understanding of all grasping."

SN 35.61

## The Depletion of All Fuel (1st)

*Paṭhamasabbupādanāpariyādanāsutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, I will teach you the principle for depleting all fuel. Listen ...
- 1.3 And what is the principle for depleting all fuel?
- 1.4 Eye consciousness arises dependent on the eye and sights. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling.
- 1.6 Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, sights, eye consciousness, eye contact, and feeling. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they're freed. When they are released, they understand: 'I have completely depleted grasping.'
- 1.8 Ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...
- 1.9 Mind consciousness arises dependent on the mind and ideas. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling.

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, mind contact, and feeling. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they're freed. When they are released, they understand: 'I have completely depleted grasping.'

This is the principle for depleting all fuel." 1.13

SN 35.62

## The Depletion of All Fuel (2nd)

*Dutiyasabbupādānapariyādānasutta*

"Mendicants, I will teach you the principle for depleting all fuel. Listen ... 1.1

And what is the principle for depleting all fuel? 1.3

What do you think, mendicants? Is the eye permanent or impermanent?" 2.1

"Impermanent, sir." 3.1

"But if it's impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?" 4.1

"Suffering, sir." 5.1

"But if it's impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: 'This is mine, I am this, this is my self'?" 6.1

"No, sir." 7.1

"Sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact ... 8.1

The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact: is that permanent or impermanent?" 12.1

"Impermanent, sir." ... 13.1

"Ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... ideas ... mind consciousness ... mind contact ... The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact: is that permanent or impermanent?" 14.1

"Impermanent, sir." 15.1

"But if it's impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?" 16.1

"Suffering, sir." 17.1

- 18.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self’?”
- 19.1 “No, sir.”
- 20.1 “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact. And they grow disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact.
- 20.3 They grow disillusioned with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...
- 20.4 They grow disillusioned with the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact. And they grow disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.
- 20.7 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’
- 20.8 This is the principle for depleting all fuel.”

# The Chapter with Migajāla

SN 35.63

## With Migajāla (1st)

*Paṭhamamigajālasutta*

At Sāvattḥī. 1.1

Then Venerable Migajāla went up to the Buddha ... and said to him: 1.2

“Sir, they speak of one who lives alone. How is one who lives alone defined? And how is living with a partner defined?” 1.4

“Migajāla, there are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, this gives rise to relishing. When there’s relishing there’s lust. When there’s lust there is yoking. A mendicant who is fettered by relishing is said to live with a partner. 2.1

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... 2.7

There are ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, this gives rise to relishing. When there’s relishing there’s lust. When there’s lust there is yoking. A mendicant who is fettered by relishing is said to live with a partner. 2.8

A mendicant who lives like this is said to live with a partner, even if they frequent remote lodgings in the wilderness and the forest that are quiet and still, far from the madding crowd, remote from 2.14

human settlements, and fit for retreat. Why is that? For craving is their partner, and they haven't given it up. That's why they're said to live with a partner.

3.1 There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, relishing ceases. When there's no relishing there's no lust. When there's no lust there's no yoking. A mendicant who is not fettered by relishing is said to live alone.

3.7 There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ...

3.8 There are ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, relishing ceases. When there's no relishing there's no lust. When there's no lust there's no yoking.

3.13 A mendicant who is not fettered by relishing is said to live alone. A mendicant who lives like this is said to live alone, even if they live within a village crowded by monks, nuns, laymen, and laywomen; by rulers and their ministers, and monastics of other religions and their disciples. Why is that? For craving is their partner, and they have given it up. That's why they're said to live alone."

SN 35.64

## With Migajāla (2nd)

*Dutiyamigajālasutta*

1.1 Then Venerable Migajāla went up to the Buddha ... and said to him:

1.3 "Sir, may the Buddha please teach me Dhamma in brief. When I've heard it, I'll live alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute."

2.1 "Migajāla, there are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keep clinging to them, this gives rise to relishing. Relishing is the origin of suffering, I say.

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known 2.5  
by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual,  
and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps cling-  
ing to them, this gives rise to relishing. Relishing is the origin of  
suffering, I say.

There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, 3.1  
agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't  
approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, relishing ceases.  
When relishing ceases, suffering ceases, I say.

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known 3.4  
by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual,  
and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep  
clinging to them, relishing ceases. When relishing ceases, suffering  
ceases, I say."

And then Venerable Migajāla approved and agreed with what 4.1  
the Buddha said. He got up from his seat, bowed, and respectfully  
circled the Buddha, keeping him on his right, before leaving.

Then Migajāla, living alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and res- 4.2  
olute, soon realized the supreme end of the spiritual path in this  
very life. He lived having achieved with his own insight the goal for  
which gentlemen rightly go forth from the lay life to homelessness.

He understood: "Rebirth is ended; the spiritual journey has 4.3  
been completed; what had to be done has been done; there is no  
return to any state of existence." And Migajāla became one of the  
perfected.

SN 35.65

## Samiddhi's Question About Māra

*Paṭhamasamiddhimārapaṇhāsutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha, in the Bamboo 1.1  
Grove, the squirrels' feeding ground. Then Venerable Samiddhi  
went up to the Buddha ... and said to him:

- 1.4 “Sir, they speak of this thing called ‘Māra’. How do we define Māra or what is known as Māra?”
- 2.1 “Samiddhi, where there is the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and phenomena to be known by eye consciousness, there is Māra or what is known as Māra.
- 2.2 Where there is the ear, sounds, ear consciousness, and phenomena to be known by ear consciousness, there is Māra or what is known as Māra.
- 2.3 Where there is the nose, smells, nose consciousness, and phenomena to be known by nose consciousness, there is Māra or what is known as Māra.
- 2.4 Where there is the tongue, tastes, tongue consciousness, and phenomena to be known by tongue consciousness, there is Māra or what is known as Māra.
- 2.5 Where there is the body, touches, body consciousness, and phenomena to be known by body consciousness, there is Māra or what is known as Māra.
- 2.6 Where there is the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and phenomena to be known by mind consciousness, there is Māra or what is known as Māra.
- 3.1 Where there is no eye, no sights, no eye consciousness, and no phenomena to be known by eye consciousness, there is no Māra or what is known as Māra.
- 3.2 Where there is no ear ... no nose ... no tongue ... no body ...
- 3.6 Where there is no mind, no ideas, no mind consciousness, and no phenomena to be known by mind consciousness, there is no Māra or what is known as Māra.”

SN 35.66

## Samiddhi’s Question About a Sentient Being

*Samiddhisattapañhāsutta*

- 1.1 “Sir, they speak of this thing called a ‘sentient being’. How do we define a sentient being or what is known as a sentient being?” ...



SN 35.67

## Samiddhi's Question About Suffering

*Samiddhidukkhapañhāsutta*

“Sir, they speak of this thing called ‘suffering’. How do we define 1.1  
suffering or what is known as suffering?” ...

SN 35.68

## Samiddhi's Question About the World

*Samiddhilokapañhāsutta*

“Sir, they speak of this thing called ‘the world’. How do we define 1.1  
the world or what is known as the world?”

“Samiddhi, where there is the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and 1.3  
phenomena to be known by eye consciousness, there is the world  
or what is known as the world. Where there is the ear ... nose  
... tongue ... body ... Where there is the mind, ideas, mind con-  
sciousness, and phenomena to be known by mind consciousness,  
there is the world or what is known as the world.

Where there is no eye, no sights, no eye consciousness, and 2.1  
no phenomena to be known by eye consciousness, there is no  
world or what is known as the world. Where there is no ear ...  
nose ... tongue ... body ... Where there is no mind, no ideas, no  
mind consciousness, and no phenomena to be known by mind  
consciousness, there is no world or what is known as the world.”

SN 35.69

## Upasena and the Viper

*Upasenaāsivisasutta*

At one time the venerables Sāriputta and Upasena were staying 1.1  
near Rājagaha in the Cool Grove, under the Snake's Hood Grotto.  
Now at that time a viper fell on Upasena's body, and he addressed

the mendicants, “Come, reverends, lift this body onto a cot and carry it outside before it’s scattered right here like a handful of chaff.”

2.1 When he said this, Sāriputta said to him, “But we don’t see any impairment in your body or deterioration of your faculties. Yet you say: ‘Come, reverends, lift this body onto a cot and carry it outside before it’s scattered right here like a handful of chaff.’”

2.7 “Reverend Sāriputta, there may be an impairment in body or deterioration of faculties for someone who thinks: ‘I am the eye’ or ‘the eye is mine.’ Or ‘I am the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...’ Or ‘I am the mind’ or ‘the mind is mine.’

2.12 But I don’t think like that. So why would there be an impairment in my body or deterioration of my faculties?”

3.1 “That must be because Venerable Upasena has long ago totally eradicated ego, possessiveness, and the underlying tendency to conceit.

3.2 That’s why it doesn’t occur to you: ‘I am the eye’ or ‘the eye is mine.’ Or ‘I am the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...’ Or ‘I am the mind’ or ‘the mind is mine.’”

3.6 Then those mendicants lifted Upasena’s body onto a cot and carried it outside. And his body was scattered right there like a handful of chaff.

SN 35.70

## Upavāna on What is Apparent in This Very Life

*Upavāṇasandiṭṭhikasutta*

1.1 Then Venerable Upavāna went up to the Buddha ... and said to him:

1.3 “Sir, they speak of ‘a teaching apparent in the present life’. In what way is the teaching apparent in the present life, immediately effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can know it for themselves?”

“Upavāna, take a mendicant who sees a sight with their eyes. 2.1  
They experience both the sight and the desire for the sight. There is  
desire for sights in them, and they understand that. Since this is so,  
this is how the teaching is apparent in the present life, immediately  
effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can  
know it for themselves.

Next, take a mendicant who hears ... smells ... tastes ... touches 3.1  
...

Next, take a mendicant who knows an idea with their mind. 4.1  
They experience both the idea and the desire for the idea. There is  
desire for ideas in them, and they understand that. Since this is so,  
this is how the teaching is apparent in the present life, immediately  
effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can  
know it for themselves.

Take a mendicant who sees a sight with their eyes. They experience 5.1  
the sight but no desire for the sight. There is no desire for  
sights in them, and they understand that. Since this is so, this is  
how the teaching is apparent in the present life, immediately effective,  
inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can know  
it for themselves.

Next, take a mendicant who hears ... smells ... tastes ... touches 6.1  
...

Next, take a mendicant who knows an idea with their mind. 7.1  
They experience the idea but no desire for the idea. There is no  
desire for ideas in them, and they understand that. Since this is so,  
this is how the teaching is apparent in the present life, immediately  
effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can  
know it for themselves.”

SN 35.71

## Six Fields of Contact (1st)

*Paṭhamachaphassāyatanasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, anyone who doesn’t truly understand the six fields of contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape has not completed the spiritual journey and is far from this teaching and training.”
- 2.1 When he said this, one of the mendicants said to the Buddha, “Here, sir, I’m lost. For I don’t truly understand the six fields of contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape.”
- 3.1 “What do you think, mendicant? Do you regard the eye like this: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self’?”
- 4.1 “No, sir.”
- 5.1 “Good, mendicant! And regarding the eye, you will truly see clearly with right wisdom that: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’ Just this is the end of suffering.
- 5.3 Do you regard the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...
- 7.1 Do you regard the mind like this: “This is mine, I am this, this is my self’?”
- 8.1 “No, sir.”
- 9.1 “Good, mendicant! And regarding the mind, you will truly see clearly with right wisdom that: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’ Just this is the end of suffering.”

SN 35.72

## Six Fields of Contact (2nd)

*Dutiyachaphassāyatanasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, anyone who doesn’t truly understand the six fields of contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape has not completed the spiritual journey and is far from this teaching and training.”

When he said this, one of the mendicants said to the Buddha, 2.1  
 “Here, sir, I’m lost, truly lost. For I don’t truly understand the six  
 fields of contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and es-  
 cape.”

“What do you think, mendicant? Do you regard the eye like 3.1  
 this: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self?’”

“Yes, sir.” 4.1

“Good, mendicant! And regarding the eye, you will truly see 5.1  
 clearly with right wisdom that: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this  
 is not my self.’ In this way you will give up the first field of contact,  
 so that there are no more future lives.

Do you regard the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... 6.1

Do you regard the mind like this: ‘This is not mine, I am not 9.1  
 this, this is not my self?’”

“Yes, sir.” 10.1

“Good, mendicant! And regarding the mind, you will truly see 11.1  
 clearly with right wisdom that: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this  
 is not my self.’ In this way you will give up the sixth field of contact,  
 so that there are no more future lives.”

SN 35.73

## Six Fields of Contact (3rd)

*Tatīyachaphassāyatanasutta*

“Mendicants, anyone who doesn’t truly understand the six fields of 1.1  
 contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape has  
 not completed the spiritual journey and is far from this teaching  
 and training.”

When he said this, one of the mendicants said to the Buddha, 2.1  
 “Here, sir, I’m lost, truly lost. For I don’t truly understand the six  
 fields of contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and es-  
 cape.”

“What do you think, mendicant? Is the eye permanent or im- 3.1  
 permanent?”

- 4.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 5.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 6.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 7.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self’?”
- 8.1 “No, sir.”
- 9.1 “Is the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind permanent or impermanent?”
- 10.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 11.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 12.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 13.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self’?”
- 14.1 “No, sir.”
- 15.1 “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.
- 15.3 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’”

# The Chapter on Sick

SN 35.74

## Sick (1st)

*Paṭhamagilānasutta*

At Sāvattḥi.

1.1

Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha, and said to him, “Sir, 1.2  
in such and such a monastery there’s a mendicant who is junior  
and not well-known. He’s sick, suffering, gravely ill. Please go to  
him out of compassion.”

When the Buddha heard that the mendicant was junior and ill, 2.1  
understanding that he was not well-known, he went to him. That  
mendicant saw the Buddha coming off in the distance and tried to  
rise on his cot.

The Buddha said to that monk, “It’s all right, mendicant, don’t 2.4  
get up. There are some seats spread out, I will sit there.”

He sat on the seat spread out and said to the mendicant, “I hope 2.7  
you’re keeping well, mendicant; I hope you’re getting by. I hope  
that your pain is fading, not growing, that its fading is evident, not  
its growing.”

“Sir, I’m not keeping well, I’m not getting by. The pain is terrible 3.1  
and growing, not fading; its growing is evident, not its fading.”

“I hope you don’t have any remorse or regret?” 4.1

“Indeed, sir, I have no little remorse and regret.” 5.1

“I hope you have no reason to blame yourself when it comes to 6.1  
ethical conduct?”

- 7.1 “No sir, I have no reason to blame myself when it comes to ethical conduct.”
- 8.1 “In that case, mendicant, why do you have remorse and regret?”
- 9.1 “Because I understand that the Buddha has not taught the Dhamma merely for the sake of ethical purity.”
- 10.1 “If that is so, what exactly do you understand to be the purpose of teaching the Dhamma?”
- 11.1 “I understand that the Buddha has taught the Dhamma for the purpose of the fading away of greed.”
- 12.1 “Good, good, mendicant! It’s good that you understand that I’ve taught the Dhamma for the purpose of the fading away of greed. For that is indeed the purpose. What do you think, mendicant? Is the eye permanent or impermanent?”
- 13.1 “Impermanent, sir.” ...
- 14.1 “Is the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind permanent or impermanent?”
- 15.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 16.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 17.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 18.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self’?”
- 19.1 “No, sir.”
- 20.1 “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.
- 20.3 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended ... there is no return to any state of existence.’”
- 21.1 That is what the Buddha said. Satisfied, that mendicant was happy with what the Buddha said. And while this discourse was being spoken, the stainless, immaculate vision of the Dhamma arose in that mendicant:
- 21.4 “Everything that has a beginning has an end.”



SN 35.75

## Sick (2nd)

*Dutiyaḡilānasutta*

Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha ... and asked him, “Sir, 1.1  
in such and such a monastery there’s a mendicant who is junior  
and not well-known. He’s sick, suffering, gravely ill. Please go to  
him out of compassion.”

When the Buddha heard that the mendicant was junior and ill, 2.1  
understanding that he was not well-known, he went to him. That  
mendicant saw the Buddha coming off in the distance and tried to  
rise on his cot.

Then the Buddha said to that monk, “It’s all right, mendicant, 2.4  
don’t get up. There are some seats spread out, I will sit there.”

He sat on the seat spread out and said to the mendicant, “I hope 2.7  
you’re keeping well, mendicant; I hope you’re getting by. I hope  
that your pain is fading, not growing, that its fading is evident, not  
its growing.”

“Sir, I’m not keeping well, I’m not getting by. ... 3.1

I have no reason to blame myself when it comes to ethical con- 3.2  
duct.”

“In that case, mendicant, why do you have remorse and regret?” 4.1

“Because I understand that the Buddha has not taught the 5.1  
Dhamma merely for the sake of ethical purity.”

“If that is so, what exactly do you understand to be the purpose 6.1  
of teaching the Dhamma?”

“I understand that the Buddha has taught the Dhamma for the 7.1  
purpose of complete extinguishment by not grasping.”

“Good, good, mendicant! It’s good that you understand that I’ve 8.1  
taught the Dhamma for the purpose of complete extinguishment  
by not grasping. For that is indeed the purpose.

What do you think, mendicant? Is the eye permanent or imper- 9.1  
manent?”

“Impermanent, sir.” ... 10.1

- 11.1 “Is the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... mind consciousness ... mind contact ... The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact: is that permanent or impermanent?”
- 12.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 13.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 14.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 15.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self’?”
- 16.1 “No, sir.”
- 17.1 “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye ... ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... mind consciousness ... mind contact ... They grow disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.
- 17.7 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’”
- 18.1 That is what the Buddha said. Satisfied, that mendicant was happy with what the Buddha said. And while this discourse was being spoken, the mind of that mendicant was freed from defilements by not grasping.

SN 35.76

## With Rādhā on Impermanence

*Rādhānīccasutta*

- 1.1 The Venerable Rādhā went up to the Buddha ... and said to him, “Sir, may the Buddha please teach me Dhamma in brief. When I’ve heard it, I’ll live alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute.”
- 1.4 “Rādhā, you should give up desire for what is impermanent. And what is impermanent? The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are impermanent. And the pleasant, painful, or neutral

feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also impermanent.  
You should give up desire for it.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... The mind, ideas, mind 1.9  
consciousness, and mind contact are impermanent. And the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also impermanent. You should give up desire for it.

You should give up desire for what is impermanent.” 1.16

SN 35.77

## With Rādhā on Suffering

*Rādhadukkhāsutta*

“Rādhā, you should give up desire for what is suffering. ...” 1.1

SN 35.78

## With Rādhā on Not-Self

*Rādhāanattāsutta*

“Rādhā, you should give up desire for what is not-self. ...” 1.1

SN 35.79

## Giving Up Ignorance (1st)

*Paṭhamaavijjāpahānasutta*

Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha ... and said to him: 1.1

“Sir, is there one thing such that by giving it up a mendicant 1.3  
gives up ignorance and gives rise to knowledge?”

“There is, mendicant.” 2.1

“But what is that one thing?” 3.1

“Ignorance is one thing such that by giving it up a mendicant 4.1  
gives up ignorance and gives rise to knowledge.”

- 5.1 “But how does a mendicant know and see so as to give up ignorance and give rise to knowledge?”
- 6.1 “When a mendicant knows and sees the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact as impermanent, ignorance is given up and knowledge arises. And also knowing and seeing the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact as impermanent, ignorance is given up and knowledge arises. ...
- 6.3 Knowing and seeing the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact as impermanent, ignorance is given up and knowledge arises. And also knowing and seeing the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact as impermanent, ignorance is given up and knowledge arises.
- 6.5 That’s how a mendicant knows and sees so as to give up ignorance and give rise to knowledge.”

SN 35.80

## Giving Up Ignorance (2nd)

*Dutiyaavijjāpahānasutta*

- 1.1 Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha ... and asked him, “Sir, is there one thing such that by giving it up a mendicant gives up ignorance and gives rise to knowledge?”
- 2.1 “There is, mendicant.”
- 3.1 “But what is that one thing?”
- 4.1 “Ignorance is one thing such that by giving it up a mendicant gives up ignorance and gives rise to knowledge.”
- 5.1 “But how does a mendicant know and see so as to give up ignorance and give rise to knowledge?”
- 6.1 “Take a mendicant who has heard: ‘Nothing is worth insisting on.’ When a mendicant has heard that nothing is worth insisting on, they directly know all things. Directly knowing all things, they completely understand all things. Completely understanding all things, they see all signs as other. They see the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact as other. And they also see the

pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact as other. ...

They see the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact as other. And they also see the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact as other. That's how a mendicant knows and sees so as to give up ignorance and give rise to knowledge.” 6.9

SN 35.81

## Several Mendicants

*Sambahulabhikkhusutta*

Then several mendicants went up to the Buddha ... and asked him, 1.1  
“Sir, sometimes wanderers of other religions ask us: ‘Reverends, what’s the purpose of leading the spiritual life under the ascetic Gotama?’ We answer them like this: ‘The purpose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand suffering.’

Answering this way, we trust that we repeat what the Buddha 1.6  
has said, and don’t misrepresent him with an untruth. We trust our explanation is in line with the teaching, and that there are no legitimate grounds for rebuke or criticism.”

“Indeed, in answering this way you repeat what I’ve said, and 2.1  
don’t misrepresent me with an untruth. Your explanation is in line with the teaching, and there are no legitimate grounds for rebuke or criticism. For the purpose of leading the spiritual life under me is to completely understand suffering.

If wanderers of other religions were to ask you: ‘Reverends, 2.3  
what is that suffering?’ You should answer them: ‘Reverends, the eye is suffering. The purpose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand this. Sights ... Eye consciousness ... Eye contact ... The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also suffering. The pur-

pose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand this.

2.10 Ear ... Nose ... Tongue ... Body ... Mind ... The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also suffering. The purpose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand this.

2.13 This is that suffering. The purpose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand this.’ When questioned by wanderers of other religions, that’s how you should answer them.”

SN 35.82

## A Question On the World

*Lokapañhāsutta*

1.1 Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha ... and said to him:

2.1 “Sir, they speak of this thing called ‘the world’. How is the world defined?”

2.3 “It wears away, mendicant, that’s why it’s called ‘the world’. And what is wearing away? The eye is wearing away. Sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact is wearing away. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also wearing away.

2.7 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... The mind ... ideas ... mind consciousness ... mind contact is wearing away. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also wearing away.

2.9 It wears away, mendicant, that’s why it’s called ‘the world.’”

SN 35.83

## Phagguna's Question

*Phaggunapañhāsutta*

And then Venerable Phagguna went up to the Buddha ... and said 1.1  
to him:

“Sir, suppose someone were to describe the Buddhas of the past 2.1  
who have become completely extinguished, cut off proliferation,  
cut off the track, finished off the cycle, and transcended suffering.  
Does the eye exist by which they could be described?

Does the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body exist ...? Does the 2.2  
mind exist by which they could be described?”

“Phagguna, suppose someone were to describe the Buddhas of 3.1  
the past who have become completely extinguished, cut off proliferation,  
cut off the track, finished off the cycle, and transcended  
suffering. The eye does not exist by which they could be described.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body does not exist ... The mind 3.2  
does not exist by which they could be described.”

# The Chapter with Channa

SN 35.84

## Liab to Wear Out

*Palokadhammasutta*

- 1.1 At Sāvatti.
- 1.2 Then Venerable Ānanda went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
  - 2.1 “Sir, they speak of this thing called ‘the world’. How is the world defined?”
  - 2.3 “Ānanda, that which is liable to wear out is called the world in the training of the Noble One. And what is liable to wear out? The eye is liable to wear out. Sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact is liable to wear out. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also liable to wear out.
  - 2.6 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... The mind ... ideas ... mind consciousness ... mind contact is liable to wear out. The painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also liable to wear out.
  - 2.8 That which is liable to wear out is called the world in the training of the Noble One.”



SN 35.85

## The World is Empty

*Suññatalokasutta*

And then Venerable Ānanda ... said to the Buddha: 1.1

“Sir, they say that ‘the world is empty’. What does the saying 1.2  
‘the world is empty’ refer to?”

“Ānanda, they say that ‘the world is empty’ because it’s empty 1.4  
of self or what belongs to self. And what is empty of self or what  
belongs to self? The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact  
are empty of self or what belongs to self. ...

The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned 1.8  
by mind contact is also empty of self or what belongs to self. They  
say that ‘the world is empty’ because it’s empty of self or what  
belongs to self.”

SN 35.86

## A Teaching In Brief

*Samkhittadhammasutta*

Seated to one side, Venerable Ānanda said to the Buddha: 1.1

“Sir, may the Buddha please teach me Dhamma in brief. When 1.2  
I’ve heard it, I’ll live alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute.”

“What do you think, Ānanda? Is the eye permanent or imper- 2.1  
manent?”

“Impermanent, sir.” 3.1

“But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?” 4.1

“Suffering, sir.” 5.1

“But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be 6.1  
regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self’?”

“No, sir.” 7.1

“Are sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact ... 8.1

- 10.2 The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact: is that permanent or impermanent?”
- 11.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 12.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 13.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 14.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”
- 15.1 “No, sir.” ...
- 16.1 “Is the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ...
- 18.1 The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact: is that permanent or impermanent?”
- 19.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 20.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 21.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 22.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”
- 23.1 “No, sir.”
- 24.1 “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact. And they grow disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact.
- 24.2 They grow disillusioned with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact.
- 24.3 Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.
- 24.4 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’”

SN 35.87

## With Channa

*Channasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha, in the Bamboo Grove, the squirrels' feeding ground. 1.1

Now at that time the venerables Sāriputta, Mahācunda, and Channa were staying on the Vulture's Peak Mountain. Now at that time Venerable Channa was sick, suffering, gravely ill. 1.2

Then in the late afternoon, Venerable Sāriputta came out of retreat, went to Venerable Mahācunda and said to him, "Come, Reverend Cunda, let's go to see Venerable Channa and ask about his illness." 1.4

"Yes, reverend," replied Mahācunda. 1.6

And then Sāriputta and Mahācunda went to see Channa and sat down on the seats spread out. Sāriputta said to Channa: "I hope you're keeping well, Reverend Channa; I hope you're getting by. I hope that your pain is fading, not growing, that its fading is evident, not its growing." 2.1

"Reverend Sāriputta, I'm not keeping well, I'm not getting by. The pain is terrible and growing, not fading; its growing is evident, not its fading. The winds piercing my head are so severe, it feels like a strong man drilling into my head with a sharp point. The pain in my head is so severe, it feels like a strong man tightening a tough leather strap around my head. The winds slicing my belly are so severe, like a deft butcher or their apprentice were slicing open a cow's belly with a meat cleaver. The burning in my body is so severe, it feels like two strong men grabbing a weaker man by the arms to burn and scorch him on a pit of glowing coals. I'm not keeping well, I'm not getting by. The pain is terrible and growing, not fading; its growing is evident, not its fading." 3.1

Reverend Sāriputta, I will slit my wrists. I don't wish to live." 3.10

"Please don't slit your wrists! Venerable Channa, keep going! We want you to keep going." 4.1

- 4.3 If you don't have any suitable food, we'll find it for you. If you don't have suitable medicine, we'll find it for you. If you don't have a capable carer, we'll find one for you.
- 4.6 Please don't slit your wrists! Venerable Channa, keep going! We want you to keep going."
- 5.1 "Reverend Sāriputta, it's not that I don't have suitable food; I do have suitable food. It's not that I don't have suitable medicine; I do have suitable medicine. It's not that I don't have a capable carer; I do have a capable carer.
- 5.7 Moreover, for a long time now I have served the Teacher with love, not without love. For it is proper for a disciple to serve the Teacher with love, not without love. You should remember this: 'The mendicant Channa will slit his wrists blamelessly.'"
- 6.1 "I'd like to ask Venerable Channa about a certain point, if you'd take the time to answer."
- 6.2 "Ask, Reverend Sāriputta. When I've heard it I'll know."
- 7.1 "Reverend Channa, do you regard the eye, eye consciousness, and things knowable by eye consciousness in this way: 'This is mine, I am this, this is my self'?"
- 7.2 Do you regard the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, mind consciousness, and things knowable by mind consciousness in this way: 'This is mine, I am this, this is my self'?"
- 8.1 "Reverend Sāriputta, I regard the eye, eye consciousness, and things knowable by eye consciousness in this way: 'This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.'"
- 8.2 I regard the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, mind consciousness, and things knowable by mind consciousness in this way: 'This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.'"
- 9.1 "Reverend Channa, what have you seen, what have you directly known in these things that you regard them in this way: 'This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self'?"
- 10.1 "Reverend Sāriputta, after seeing cessation, after directly knowing cessation in these things I regard them in this way: 'This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.'"

When he said this, Venerable Mahācunda said to Venerable 11.1  
Channa, “So, Reverend Channa, you should regularly apply your  
mind well to this instruction of the Buddha:

‘For the dependent there is agitation. For the independent 11.3  
there’s no agitation. When there’s no agitation there is tranquility.  
When there’s tranquility there’s no inclination. When there’s no  
inclination, there’s no coming and going. When there’s no coming  
and going, there’s no passing away and reappearing. When there’s  
no passing away and reappearing, there’s no this world or world  
beyond or between the two. Just this is the end of suffering.’”

And when the venerables Sāriputta and Mahācunda had given 12.1  
Venerable Channa this advice they got up from their seat and left.  
Not long after those venerables had left, Venerable Channa slit his  
wrists.

Then Sāriputta went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one 13.1  
side, and said to him, “Sir, Venerable Channa has slit his wrists.  
Where has he been reborn in his next life?”

“Sāriputta, didn’t the mendicant Channa declare his blameless- 13.4  
ness to you personally?”

“Sir, there is a Vajjian village named Pubbavijjhana where 13.5  
Channa had families with whom he was friendly, intimate, and  
familiar.”

“The mendicant Channa did indeed have such families, Sāriputta. 13.7  
But this is not enough for me to call someone ‘blameworthy’.  
When someone lays down this body and takes up another body, I  
call them ‘blameworthy’. But the mendicant Channa did no such  
thing.

You should remember this: ‘The mendicant Channa slit his 13.11  
wrists blamelessly.’”

SN 35.88

## With Puṇṇa

*Puṇṇasutta*

- 1.1 And then Venerable Puṇṇa went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.2 “Sir, may the Buddha please teach me Dhamma in brief. When I’ve heard it, I’ll live alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute.”
- 2.1 “Puṇṇa, there are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, this gives rise to relishing. Relishing is the origin of suffering, I say.
- 2.5 There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... There are ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, this gives rise to relishing. Relishing is the origin of suffering, I say.
- 3.1 There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn’t approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, relishing ceases. When relishing ceases, suffering ceases, I say. ...
- 3.4 There are ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn’t approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, relishing ceases. When relishing ceases, suffering ceases, I say.
- 4.1 Puṇṇa, now that I’ve given you this brief advice, what country will you live in?”
- 4.2 “Sir, there’s a country called Sunāparanta; I will live there.”
- 5.1 “The people of Sunāparanta are wild and rough, Puṇṇa. If they abuse and insult you, what will you think of them?”
- 6.1 “If they abuse and insult me, I will think: ‘These people of Sunāparanta are gracious, truly gracious, since they don’t hit me with their fists.’ That’s what I’ll think, Blessed One. That’s what I’ll think, Holy One.”

“But if they do hit you with their fists, what will you think of them then?” 7.1

“If they hit me with their fists, I’ll think: ‘These people of Sunāparanta are gracious, truly gracious, since they don’t throw stones at me.’ That’s what I’ll think, Blessed One. That’s what I’ll think, Holy One.” 8.1

“But if they do throw stones at you, what will you think of them then?” 9.1

“If they throw stones at me, I’ll think: ‘These people of Sunāparanta are gracious, truly gracious, since they don’t beat me with a club.’ That’s what I’ll think, Blessed One. That’s what I’ll think, Holy One.” 10.1

“But if they do beat you with a club, what will you think of them then?” 11.1

“If they beat me with a club, I’ll think: ‘These people of Sunāparanta are gracious, truly gracious, since they don’t stab me with a knife.’ That’s what I’ll think, Blessed One. That’s what I’ll think, Holy One.” 12.1

“But if they do stab you with a knife, what will you think of them then?” 13.1

“If they stab me with a knife, I’ll think: ‘These people of Sunāparanta are gracious, truly gracious, since they don’t take my life with a sharp knife.’ That’s what I’ll think, Blessed One. That’s what I’ll think, Holy One.” 14.1

“But if they do take your life with a sharp knife, what will you think of them then?” 15.1

“If they take my life with a sharp knife, I’ll think: ‘There are disciples of the Buddha who looked for someone to assist with slitting their wrists because they were horrified, repelled, and disgusted with the body and with life. And I have found this without looking!’ That’s what I’ll think, Blessed One. That’s what I’ll think, Holy One.” 16.1

- 17.1 “Good, good Puṇṇa! Having such self-control and peacefulness, you will be quite capable of living in Sunāparanta. Now, Puṇṇa, go at your convenience.”
- 18.1 And then Puṇṇa welcomed and agreed with the Buddha’s words. He got up from his seat, bowed, and respectfully circled the Buddha, keeping him on his right. Then he set his lodgings in order and, taking his bowl and robe, set out for Sunāparanta.
- 18.2 Traveling stage by stage, he arrived at Sunāparanta, and stayed there. Within that rainy season he confirmed around five hundred male and five hundred female lay followers. And within that same rainy season he realized the three knowledges. And within that same rainy season he became completely extinguished.
- 19.1 Then several mendicants went up to the Buddha ... and asked him, “Sir, the gentleman named Puṇṇa, who was advised in brief by the Buddha, has passed away. Where has he been reborn in his next life?”
- 20.1 “Mendicants, Puṇṇa was astute. He practiced in line with the teachings, and did not trouble me about the teachings. Puṇṇa has become completely extinguished.”

SN 35.89

## With Bāhiya

*Bāhiyasutta*

- 1.1 Then Venerable Bāhiya went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.2 “Sir, may the Buddha please teach me Dhamma in brief. When I’ve heard it, I’ll live alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute.”
- 2.1 “What do you think, Bāhiya? Is the eye permanent or impermanent?”
- 3.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 4.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 5.1 “Suffering, sir.”



- “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’” 6.1
- “No, sir.” 7.1
- “Are sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact ... 8.1
- The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact: is that permanent or impermanent?” 9.4
- “Impermanent, sir.” 10.1
- “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?” 11.1
- “Suffering, sir.” 12.1
- “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’” 13.1
- “No, sir.” 14.1
- “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact. And they grow disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact. 15.1
- They grow disillusioned with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact. 15.2
- Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed. 15.3
- They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’” 15.4
- And then Venerable Bāhiya approved and agreed with what the Buddha said. He got up from his seat, bowed, and respectfully circled the Buddha, keeping him on his right, before leaving. 16.1
- Then Bāhiya, living alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute, soon realized the supreme end of the spiritual path in this very life. He lived having achieved with his own insight the goal for which gentlemen rightly go forth from the lay life to homelessness. 16.2
- He understood: “Rebirth is ended; the spiritual journey has been completed; what had to be done has been done; there is no 16.3

return to any state of existence.” And Venerable Bāhiya became one of the perfected.

SN 35.90

## Turbulence (1st)

*Paṭhamaejāsutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, turbulence is a disease, a boil, a dart. That’s why the Realized One lives unperturbed, with dart drawn out.
- 1.3 Now, a mendicant might wish: ‘May I live unperturbed, with dart drawn out.’
- 1.4 So let them not conceive anything to be the eye, let them not conceive it in the eye, let them not conceive it as the eye, let them not conceive that ‘the eye is mine.’ Let them not conceive sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact ... Let them not conceive anything to be the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact. Let them not conceive it in that, let them not conceive it as that, and let them not conceive that ‘that is mine.’
- 2.1 Let them not conceive anything to be the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... ideas ... mind consciousness ... mind contact ... Let them not conceive anything to be the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact. Let them not conceive it in that, let them not conceive it as that, and let them not conceive that ‘that is mine.’
- 3.7 Let them not conceive anything to be all, let them not conceive it in all, let them not conceive it as all, let them not conceive that ‘all is mine.’
- 4.1 Not conceiving, they don’t grasp at anything in the world. Not grasping, they’re not anxious. Not being anxious, they personally become extinguished.
- 4.3 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’”

SN 35.91

## Turbulence (2nd)

*Dutiyaejāsutta*

“Mendicants, turbulence is a disease, a boil, a dart. That’s why the 1.1  
Realized One lives unperturbed, with dart drawn out.

Now, a mendicant might wish: ‘May I live unperturbed, with 1.3  
dart drawn out.’

So let them not conceive anything to be the eye, let them not 1.4  
conceive it in the eye, let them not conceive it as the eye, let them  
not conceive that ‘the eye is mine.’ Let them not conceive sights  
... eye consciousness ... eye contact ... Let them not conceive  
anything to be the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises  
conditioned by eye contact. Let them not conceive it in that, let  
them not conceive it as that, and let them not conceive that ‘that is  
mine.’ For whatever you conceive it to be, whatever you conceive  
it in, whatever you conceive it as, and whatever you conceive to  
be ‘mine’: that becomes something else. The world is attached to  
being, taking pleasure only in being, yet it becomes something else.

Let them not conceive anything to be the ear ... nose ... tongue 2.1  
... body ...

Let them not conceive anything to be the mind ... mind con- 3.1  
sciousness ... mind contact ... Let them not conceive anything to  
be the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned  
by mind contact. Let them not conceive it in that, let them not  
conceive it as that, and let them not conceive that ‘that is mine.’ For  
whatever you conceive it to be, whatever you conceive it in, what-  
ever you conceive it as, and whatever you conceive to be ‘mine’:  
that becomes something else. The world is attached to being, taking  
pleasure only in being, yet it becomes something else.

As far as the aggregates, elements, and sense fields extend, they 4.1  
don’t conceive anything to be that, they don’t conceive it in that,  
they don’t conceive it as that, and they don’t conceive that ‘that is  
mine.’

- 4.2 Not conceiving, they don't grasp at anything in the world. Not grasping, they're not anxious. Not being anxious, they personally become extinguished.
- 4.4 They understand: 'Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.'

SN 35.92

## A Duality (1st)

*Paṭhamadvayasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, I will teach you a duality. Listen ...
- 1.3 And what is a duality? It's just the eye and sights, the ear and sounds, the nose and smells, the tongue and tastes, the body and touches, and the mind and ideas. This is called a duality.
- 2.1 Mendicants, suppose someone was to say: 'I'll reject this duality and describe another duality.' They'd have no grounds for that, they'd be stumped by questions, and, in addition, they'd get frustrated. Why is that? Because they're out of their element."

SN 35.93

## A Duality (2nd)

*Dutiyadvayasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, consciousness exists dependent on a duality. And what is that duality?
- 1.3 Eye consciousness arises dependent on the eye and sights. The eye is impermanent, decaying, and perishing. Sights are impermanent, decaying, and perishing. So this duality is tottering and toppling; it's impermanent, decaying, and perishing. Eye consciousness is impermanent, decaying, and perishing. And the causes and reasons that give rise to eye consciousness are also impermanent, decaying, and perishing. But since eye conscious-

ness has arisen dependent on conditions that are impermanent, how could it be permanent?

The meeting, coming together, and joining together of these three things is called eye contact. Eye contact is also impermanent, decaying, and perishing. And the causes and reasons that give rise to eye contact are also impermanent, decaying, and perishing. But since eye contact has arisen dependent on conditions that are impermanent, how could it be permanent? 1.10

Contacted, one feels, intends, and perceives. So these things too are tottering and toppling; they're impermanent, decaying, and perishing. 1.14

Ear consciousness ... Nose consciousness ... Tongue consciousness ... Body consciousness ... 2.1

Mind consciousness arises dependent on the mind and ideas. The mind is impermanent, decaying, and perishing. Ideas are impermanent, decaying, and perishing. So this duality is tottering and toppling; it's impermanent, decaying, and perishing. Mind consciousness is impermanent, decaying, and perishing. And the causes and reasons that give rise to mind consciousness are also impermanent, decaying, and perishing. But since mind consciousness has arisen dependent on conditions that are impermanent, how could it be permanent? 3.1

The meeting, coming together, and joining together of these three things is called mind contact. Mind contact is also impermanent, decaying, and perishing. And the causes and reasons that give rise to mind contact are also impermanent, decaying, and perishing. But since mind contact has arisen dependent on conditions that are impermanent, how could it be permanent? 3.8

Contacted, one feels, intends, and perceives. So these things too are tottering and toppling; they're impermanent, decaying, and perishing. 3.12

This is how consciousness exists dependent on a duality." 3.14

# The Chapter on the Sixes

SN 35.94

## Untamed, Unguarded

*Adantaaguttasutta*

- 1.1 At Sāvatti.
- 1.2 “Mendicants, these six fields of contact bring suffering when they’re untamed, unguarded, unprotected, and unrestrained. What six?
- 1.4 The field of eye contact brings suffering when it’s untamed, unguarded, unprotected, and unrestrained.
- 1.5 The field of ear contact ... nose contact ... tongue contact ... body contact ...
- 1.6 The field of mind contact brings suffering when it’s untamed, unguarded, unprotected, and unrestrained.
- 1.7 These six fields of contact bring suffering when they’re untamed, unguarded, unprotected, and unrestrained.
- 2.1 These six fields of contact bring happiness when they’re well tamed, well guarded, well protected, and well restrained. What six?
- 2.3 The field of eye contact brings happiness when it’s well tamed, well guarded, well protected, and well restrained.
- 2.4 The field of ear contact ... nose contact ... tongue contact ... body contact ...
- 2.5 The field of mind contact brings happiness when it’s well tamed, well guarded, well protected, and well restrained.

These six fields of contact bring happiness when they're well 2.6  
tamed, well guarded, well protected, and well restrained."

That is what the Buddha said. Then the Holy One, the Teacher, 2.7  
went on to say:

"Mendicants, it's just the six fields of contact 3.1  
that lead the unrestrained to suffering.  
Those who understand how to restrain them  
live with faith as partner, uncorrupted.

When you've seen pleasant sights 4.1  
and unpleasant ones, too,  
get rid of all manner of desire for the pleasant,  
without hating what you don't like.

When you've heard sounds both liked and disliked, 5.1  
don't fall under the thrall of sounds you like,  
get rid of hate for the unliked,  
and don't hurt your mind  
by thinking of what you don't like.

When you've smelled a pleasant, fragrant scent, 6.1  
and one that's foul and unpleasant,  
get rid of repulsion for the unpleasant,  
while not yielding to desire for the pleasant.

When you've enjoyed a sweet, delicious taste, 7.1  
and sometimes those that are bitter,  
don't be attached to enjoying sweet tastes,  
and don't despise the bitter.

Don't be intoxicated by a pleasant touch, 8.1  
and don't tremble at a painful touch.  
Look with equanimity at the duality  
of pleasant and painful contacts,  
without favoring or opposing anything.

- 9.1 People generally let their perceptions proliferate;  
perceiving and proliferating, they are attracted.  
When you've expelled all thoughts of the lay life,  
wander intent on renunciation.
- 10.1 When the mind is well developed like this  
regarding the six,  
it doesn't waver at contacts at all.  
Mendicants, those who have mastered greed and hate  
go beyond birth and death."

SN 35.95

## Mālunkyaputta

*Mālukyaputtasutta*

- 1.1 Then Venerable Mālunkyaputta went up to the Buddha ... and asked him, "Sir, may the Buddha please teach me Dhamma in brief. When I've heard it, I'll live alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute."
- 2.1 "Well now, Mālunkyaputta, what are we to say to the young monks, when even an old man like you, elderly and senior, advanced in years, having reached the final stage of life, asks for brief advice?"
- 3.1 "Sir, even though I'm an old man, elderly and senior, may the Buddha please teach me Dhamma in brief! May the Holy one please teach me in brief! Hopefully I can understand the meaning of what the Buddha says. Hopefully I can be an heir of the Buddha's teaching!"
- 4.1 "What do you think, Mālunkyaputta? Do you have any desire or greed or fondness for sights known by the eye that you haven't seen, you've never seen before, you don't see, and you don't think would be seen?"
- 4.3 "No, sir."



“Do you have any desire or greed or affection for sounds known  
by the ear ... 5.1

smells known by the nose ... 6.1

tastes known by the tongue ... 7.1

touches known by the body ... 8.1

ideas known by the mind that you haven’t known, you’ve never  
known before, you don’t know, and you don’t think would be  
known?” 9.1

“No, sir.” 9.2

“In that case, when it comes to things that are to be seen, heard,  
thought, and known: in the seen will be merely the seen; in the  
heard will be merely the heard; in the thought will be merely the  
thought; in the known will be merely the known. When this is the  
case, you won’t be ‘by that’. When you’re not ‘by that’, you won’t  
be ‘in that’. When you’re not ‘in that’, you won’t be in this world  
or the world beyond or in between the two. Just this is the end of  
suffering.” 10.1

“This is how I understand the detailed meaning of the Buddha’s  
brief statement: 11.1

‘When you see a sight, mindfulness is lost  
as you focus on a pleasant feature. 12.1  
Experiencing it with a mind full of desire,  
you keep clinging to it.

Many feelings grow  
arising from sights. 13.1  
The mind is damaged  
by covetousness and cruelty.  
Heaping up suffering like this,  
you’re said to be far from extinguishment.

When you hear a sound, mindfulness is lost  
as you focus on a pleasant feature. 14.1  
Experiencing it with a mind full of desire,  
you keep clinging to it.

- 15.1 Many feelings grow  
arising from sounds.  
The mind is damaged  
by covetousness and cruelty.  
Heaping up suffering like this,  
you're said to be far from extinguishment.
- 16.1 When you smell an odor, mindfulness is lost  
as you focus on a pleasant feature.  
Experiencing it with a mind full of desire,  
you keep clinging to it.
- 17.1 Many feelings grow  
arising from smells.  
The mind is damaged  
by covetousness and cruelty.  
Heaping up suffering like this,  
you're said to be far from extinguishment.
- 18.1 When you enjoy a taste, mindfulness is lost  
as you focus on a pleasant feature.  
Experiencing it with a mind full of desire,  
you keep clinging to it.
- 19.1 Many feelings grow  
arising from tastes.  
The mind is damaged  
by covetousness and cruelty.  
Heaping up suffering like this,  
you're said to be far from extinguishment.
- 20.1 When you sense a touch, mindfulness is lost  
as you focus on a pleasant feature.  
Experiencing it with a mind full of desire,  
you keep clinging to it.

- Many feelings grow  
arising from touches. 21.1  
The mind is damaged  
by covetousness and cruelty.  
Heaping up suffering like this,  
you're said to be far from extinguishment.
- When you know an idea, mindfulness is lost 22.1  
as you focus on a pleasant feature.  
Experiencing it with a mind full of desire,  
you keep clinging to it.
- Many feelings grow 23.1  
arising from ideas.  
The mind is damaged  
by covetousness and cruelty.  
Heaping up suffering like this,  
you're said to be far from extinguishment.
- When you see a sight with mindfulness, 24.1  
there's no desire for sights.  
Experiencing it with a mind free of desire,  
you don't keep clinging to it.
- Even as you see a sight 25.1  
and get familiar with how it feels,  
you wear away, you don't heap up:  
that's how to live mindfully.  
Eroding suffering like this,  
you're said to be in the presence of extinguishment.
- When you hear a sound with mindfulness, 26.1  
there's no desire for sounds.  
Experiencing it with a mind free of desire,  
you don't keep clinging to it.

- 27.1 Even as you hear a sound  
and get familiar with how it feels,  
you wear away, you don't heap up:  
that's how to live mindfully.  
Eroding suffering like this,  
you're said to be in the presence of extinguishment.
- 28.1 When you smell an odor with mindfulness,  
there's no desire for odors.  
Experiencing it with a mind free of desire,  
you don't keep clinging to it.
- 29.1 Even as you smell an odor  
and get familiar with how it feels,  
you wear away, you don't heap up:  
that's how to live mindfully.  
Eroding suffering like this,  
you're said to be in the presence of extinguishment.
- 30.1 Enjoying a taste with mindfulness,  
there's no desire for tastes.  
Experiencing it with a mind free of desire,  
you don't keep clinging to it.
- 31.1 Even as you savor a taste  
and get familiar with how it feels,  
you wear away, you don't heap up:  
that's how to live mindfully.  
Eroding suffering like this,  
you're said to be in the presence of extinguishment.
- 32.1 When you sense a touch with mindfulness,  
there's no desire for touches.  
Experiencing it with a mind free of desire,  
you don't keep clinging to it.

Even as you sense a touch 33.1  
 and get familiar with how it feels,  
 you wear away, you don't heap up:  
 that's how to live mindfully.  
 Eroding suffering like this,  
 you're said to be in the presence of extinguishment.

When you know an idea with mindfulness, 34.1  
 there's no desire for ideas.  
 Experiencing it with a mind free of desire,  
 you don't keep clinging to it.

Even as you know an idea 35.1  
 and get familiar with how it feels,  
 you wear away, you don't heap up:  
 that's how to live mindfully.  
 Eroding suffering like this,  
 you're said to be in the presence of extinguishment.'

That's how I understand the detailed meaning of the Buddha's 36.1  
 brief statement."

"Good, good, Māluṅkyaputta! It's good that you understand 36.2  
 the detailed meaning of what I've said in brief like this." And he  
 repeated the verses in full.

"This is how to understand the detailed meaning of what I said 41.1  
 in brief."

And then Venerable Māluṅkyaputta approved and agreed with 42.1  
 what the Buddha said. He got up from his seat, bowed, and respect-  
 fully circled the Buddha, keeping him on his right, before leaving.  
 Then Māluṅkyaputta, living alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and  
 resolute, soon realized the supreme end of the spiritual path in this  
 very life. He lived having achieved with his own insight the goal for  
 which gentlemen rightly go forth from the lay life to homelessness.

He understood: "Rebirth is ended; the spiritual journey has 42.3  
 been completed; what had to be done has been done; there is no

return to any state of existence.” And Venerable Mālunkyaṇaputta became one of the perfected.

SN 35.96

## Liable to Decline

*Parihānadhammasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, I will teach you who is liable to decline, who is not liable to decline, and the six fields of mastery. Listen ...
- 1.3 And how is someone liable to decline? When a mendicant sees a sight with the eye, bad, unskillful phenomena arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. Suppose that mendicant tolerates them and doesn’t give them up, get rid of them, eliminate them, and obliterate them. They should understand: ‘My skillful qualities are declining. For this is what the Buddha calls decline.’
- 2.1 Furthermore, when a mendicant hears a sound ... smells an odor ... tastes a flavor ... feels a touch ... knows an idea with the mind, bad, unskillful phenomena arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. If that mendicant tolerates them and doesn’t give them up, get rid of them, eliminate them, and obliterate them, they should understand: ‘My skillful qualities are declining. For this is what the Buddha calls decline.’ That’s how someone is liable to decline.
- 3.1 And how is someone not liable to decline? When a mendicant sees a sight with the eye, bad, unskillful phenomena arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. Suppose that mendicant doesn’t tolerate them but gives them up, gets rid of them, eliminates them, and obliterate them. They should understand: ‘My skillful qualities are not declining. For this is what the Buddha calls non-decline.’
- 4.1 Furthermore, when a mendicant hears a sound ... smells an odor ... tastes a flavor ... feels a touch ... knows an idea with the mind, bad, unskillful phenomena arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. Suppose that mendicant doesn’t tolerate them but gives

them up, gets rid of them, eliminates them, and obliterates them. They should understand: ‘My skillful qualities are not declining. For this is what the Buddha calls non-decline.’ That’s how someone is not liable to decline.

And what are the six fields of mastery? When a mendicant sees 5.1  
a sight with the eye, bad, unskillful phenomena don’t arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. They should understand: ‘This sense field has been mastered. For this is what the Buddha calls a field of mastery.’ ... Furthermore, when a mendicant knows an idea with the mind, bad, unskillful phenomena don’t arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. They should understand: ‘This sense field has been mastered. For this is what the Buddha calls a field of mastery.’ These are the six fields of mastery.”

SN 35.97

## One Who Lives Negligently

*Pamāḍavihārisutta*

“Mendicants, I will teach you who lives negligently and who lives 1.1  
diligently. Listen ...

And how does someone live negligently? 1.3

When you live with the eye faculty unrestrained, your mind be- 1.4  
comes polluted when it comes to sights known by the eye. When the mind is polluted, there’s no joy. When there’s no joy, there’s no rapture. When there’s no rapture, there’s no tranquility. When there’s no tranquility, there’s suffering. When one is suffering, the mind does not become immersed in samādhi. When the mind is not immersed in samādhi, principles do not become clear. Because principles have not become clear, you’re considered to live negligently.

When you live with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind 1.12  
faculty unrestrained, your mind becomes polluted when it comes to ideas known by the mind. When the mind is polluted, there’s no joy. When there’s no joy, there’s no rapture. When there’s no

rapture, there's no tranquility. When there's no tranquility, there's suffering. When one is suffering, the mind does not become immersed in samādhi. When the mind is not immersed in samādhi, principles do not become clear. Because principles have not become clear, you're considered to live negligently.

1.23 That's how someone lives negligently.

2.1 And how does someone live diligently?

2.2 When you live with the eye faculty restrained, your mind doesn't become polluted when it comes to sights known by the eye. When the mind isn't polluted, joy springs up. Being joyful, rapture springs up. When the mind is full of rapture, the body becomes tranquil. When the body is tranquil, one feels bliss. And when blissful, the mind becomes immersed in samādhi. When the mind is immersed in samādhi, principles become clear. Because principles have become clear, you're considered to live diligently.

2.10 When you live with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind faculty restrained, your mind doesn't become polluted when it comes to ideas known by the mind. When the mind isn't polluted, joy springs up. Being joyful, rapture springs up. When the mind is full of rapture, the body becomes tranquil. When the body is tranquil, one feels bliss. And when blissful, the mind becomes immersed in samādhi. When the mind is immersed in samādhi, principles become clear. Because principles have become clear, you're considered to live diligently.

2.20 That's how someone lives diligently."

SN 35.98

## Restraint

*Samvarasutta*

1.1 "Mendicants, I will teach you who is restrained and who is unrestrained. Listen ...

1.3 And how is someone unrestrained?



There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, they should understand: ‘My skillful qualities are declining. For this is what the Buddha calls decline.’ 1.4

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, they should understand: ‘My skillful qualities are declining. For this is what the Buddha calls decline.’ 1.8

This is how someone is unrestrained. 1.13

And how is someone restrained? 2.1

There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn’t approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, they should understand: ‘My skillful qualities are not declining. For this is what the Buddha calls non-decline.’ 2.2

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn’t approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, they should understand: ‘My skillful qualities are not declining. For this is what the Buddha calls non-decline.’ 2.6

This is how someone is restrained.” 2.11

## SN 35.99

### Immersion

#### *Samādhisutta*

“Mendicants, develop immersion. A mendicant who has immersion truly understands. What do they truly understand? 1.1

They truly understand that the eye is impermanent. They truly understand that sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact ... the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is impermanent. ... 1.4

- 1.9 They truly understand that the mind is impermanent. They truly understand that ideas ... mind consciousness ... mind contact ... the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is impermanent.
- 1.14 Mendicants, develop immersion. A mendicant who has immersion truly understands.”

SN 35.100

## Retreat

*Paṭisallānasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, meditate in retreat. A mendicant in retreat truly understands. What do they truly understand?
- 1.4 They truly understand that the eye is impermanent. They truly understand that sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact ... the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is impermanent.
- 1.9 Mendicants, meditate in retreat. A mendicant in retreat truly understands.”

SN 35.101

## It’s Not Yours (1st)

*Paṭhamanatumhākasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, give up what’s not yours. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness. And what isn’t yours?
- 1.4 The eye isn’t yours: give it up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness. Sights ... Eye consciousness ... Eye contact ... The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact isn’t yours: give it up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness.
- 2.1 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...

The mind isn't yours: give it up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness. Ideas ... Mind consciousness ... Mind contact ... The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact isn't yours: give it up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness. 3.1

Suppose a person was to carry off the grass, sticks, branches, and leaves in this Jeta's Grove, or burn them, or do what they want with them. Would you think: 'This person is carrying us off, burning us, or doing what they want with us?'

"No, sir. Why is that? Because to us that's neither self nor belonging to self." 5.1

"In the same way, the eye isn't yours: give it up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness. ... 8.1

The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact isn't yours: give it up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness." 8.7

SN 35.102

## It's Not Yours (2nd)

*Dutiyanatumhākasutta*

"Mendicants, give up what's not yours. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness. And what isn't yours? 1.1

The eye isn't yours: give it up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness. Sights ... Eye consciousness ... Eye contact ... 1.4

The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact isn't yours: give it up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness. 1.16

Give up what's not yours. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness." 1.19

SN 35.103

## About Uddaka

*Uddakasutta*

1.1 “Mendicants, Uddaka son of Rāma, used to say:

1.2       ‘This ever is the knowledge master!  
           This ever is the conqueror of all!  
           This ever is the boil’s root dug out,  
           never dug out before!’

1.6       Even though Uddaka son of Rāma was no knowledge master, he said ‘I’m a knowledge master.’ Though he was no conqueror of all, he said ‘I’m conqueror of all.’ And though the boil’s root was not dug out, he said ‘I’ve dug out the boil’s root.’

1.7       Here’s how a mendicant would rightly say:

1.8       ‘This ever is the knowledge master!  
           This ever is the conqueror of all!  
           This ever is the boil’s root dug out,  
           never dug out before!’

2.1       And how is someone a knowledge master? It’s when a mendicant truly understands the six fields of contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape. That’s how a mendicant is a knowledge master.

3.1       And how is a mendicant a conqueror of all? It’s when a mendicant comes to be freed by not grasping after truly understanding the six fields of contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape. That’s how a mendicant is a conqueror of all.

4.1       And how has a mendicant dug out the boil’s root, which was never dug out before? ‘Boil’ is a term for this body made up of the four primary elements, produced by mother and father, built up from rice and porridge, liable to impermanence, to wearing away and erosion, to breaking up and destruction. ‘Boil’s root’ is a term

for craving. It's when a mendicant has given up craving, cut it off at the root, made it like a palm stump, obliterated it, so it's unable to arise in the future. That's how a mendicant has dug out the boil's root, which was never dug out before.

Uddaka son of Rāma used to say: 5.1

‘This ever is the knowledge master! 5.2

This ever is the conqueror of all!

This ever is the boil's root dug out,  
never dug out before!’

Even though Uddaka son of Rāma was no knowledge master, 5.6  
he said ‘I'm a knowledge master.’ Though he was no conqueror of  
all, he said ‘I'm conqueror of all.’ And though the boil's root was  
not dug out, he said ‘I've dug out the boil's root.’

But that's how a mendicant would rightly say: 5.7

‘This ever is the knowledge master! 5.8

This ever is the conqueror of all!

This ever is the boil's root dug out,  
never dug out before!’

*THE THIRD FIFTY*

# The Chapter on Sanctuary

SN 35.104

## Sanctuary from the Yoke

*Yogakkhemisutta*

At Sāvatthī. 1.1

“Mendicants, I will teach you an exposition of the teaching, an 1.2  
explanation of one who has found sanctuary from the yoke. Listen

...

And what is an exposition of the teaching, an explanation of one 1.4  
who has found sanctuary from the yoke?

There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, 1.5  
agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. The Realized One has  
given these up, cut them off at the root, made them like a palm  
stump, and obliterated them, so they are unable to arise in the  
future. He teaches yoking oneself to meditation for giving them up.  
That’s why the Realized One is called one who has found sanctuary  
from the yoke. ...

There are ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, 1.8  
agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. The Realized One has  
given these up, cut them off at the root, made them like a palm  
stump, and obliterated them, so they are unable to arise in the  
future. He teaches yoking oneself to meditation for giving them up.  
That’s why the Realized One is called one who has found sanctuary  
from the yoke.

- 1.11 This is an exposition of the teaching, an explanation of one who has found sanctuary from the yoke.”

SN 35.105

## Because of Grasping

*Upādāyasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, when what exists, because of grasping what, do pleasure and pain arise in oneself?”
- 2.1 “Our teachings are rooted in the Buddha. ...”
- 3.1 “Mendicants, when there’s an eye, because of grasping the eye, pleasure and pain arise in oneself. ... When there’s a mind, because of grasping the mind, pleasure and pain arise in oneself.
- 3.3 What do you think, mendicants? Is the eye permanent or impermanent?”
- 4.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 5.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 6.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 7.1 “But by not grasping what’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, would pleasure and pain arise in oneself?”
- 8.1 “No, sir.” ...
- 9.1 “Is the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind permanent or impermanent?”
- 16.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 17.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 18.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 19.1 “But by not grasping what’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, would pleasure and pain arise in oneself?”
- 20.1 “No, sir.”
- 21.1 “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.



They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’” 21.3

SN 35.106

## The Origin of Suffering

*Dukkhasamudayasutta*

“Mendicants, I will teach you the origin and ending of suffering. Listen ... 1.1

And what, mendicants, is the origin of suffering? Eye consciousness arises dependent on the eye and sights. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. This is the origin of suffering ... 1.3

Mind consciousness arises dependent on the mind and ideas. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. This is the origin of suffering. 1.11

And what is the ending of suffering? Eye consciousness arises dependent on the eye and sights. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. When that craving fades away and ceases with nothing left over, grasping ceases. When grasping ceases, continued existence ceases. When continued existence ceases, rebirth ceases. When rebirth ceases, old age and death, sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress cease. That is how this entire mass of suffering ceases. This is the ending of suffering. ... 2.1

Mind consciousness arises dependent on the mind and ideas. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. When that craving fades away and ceases with nothing left over, grasping ceases. When grasping ceases, continued existence ceases. When continued existence ceases, rebirth ceases. When rebirth ceases, old age and death, sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress cease. That 2.12

is how this entire mass of suffering ceases. This is the ending of suffering.”

SN 35.107

## The Origin of the World

*Lokasamudayasutta*

1.1 “Mendicants, I will teach you the origin and ending of the world. Listen . . .

1.3 And what, mendicants, is the origin of the world? Eye consciousness arises dependent on the eye and sights. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. Craving is a condition for grasping. Grasping is a condition for continued existence. Continued existence is a condition for rebirth. Rebirth is a condition for old age and death, sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress to come to be. This is the origin of the world. . . .

1.13 Mind consciousness arises dependent on the mind and ideas. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. Craving is a condition for grasping. Grasping is a condition for continued existence. Continued existence is a condition for rebirth. Rebirth is a condition for old age and death, sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress to come to be. This is the origin of the world.

2.1 And what is the ending of the world? Eye consciousness arises dependent on the eye and sights. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. When that craving fades away and ceases with nothing left over, grasping ceases. When grasping ceases, continued existence ceases. When continued existence ceases, rebirth ceases. When rebirth ceases, old age and death, sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress cease. That is how this entire mass of suffering ceases. This is the ending of the world. . . .

Mind consciousness arises dependent on the mind and ideas. 2.12  
 The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. When that craving fades away and ceases with nothing left over, grasping ceases. When grasping ceases ... That is how this entire mass of suffering ceases. This is the ending of the world."

SN 35.108

## I'm Better

*Seyyohamasmisutta*

"Mendicants, when what exists, because of grasping what and insisting on what, do people think 'I'm better' or 'I'm equal' or 'I'm worse'?" 1.1

"Our teachings are rooted in the Buddha. ..." 2.1

"When there's an eye, because of grasping the eye and insisting on the eye, people think 'I'm better' or 'I'm equal' or 'I'm worse'." 3.1

...

When there's a mind, because of grasping the mind and insisting on the mind, people think 'I'm better' or 'I'm equal' or 'I'm worse'." 3.3

What do you think, mendicants? Is the eye permanent or impermanent?" 3.4

"Impermanent, sir." 4.1

"But if it's impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?" 5.1

"Suffering, sir." 6.1

"But by not grasping what's impermanent, suffering, and perishable, would people think 'I'm better' or 'I'm equal' or 'I'm worse'?" 7.1

"No, sir." ... 8.1

"Is the mind permanent or impermanent?" 10.1

"Impermanent, sir." 11.1

"But if it's impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?" 12.1

"Suffering, sir." 13.1

"But by not grasping what's impermanent, suffering, and perishable, would people think 'I'm better' or 'I'm equal' or 'I'm worse'?" 14.1

- 15.1 “No, sir.”
- 16.1 “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.
- 16.3 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’”

SN 35.109

## Things Prone to Being Fettered

*Saṁyojanīyasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, I will teach you the things that are prone to being fettered, and the fetter. Listen ...
- 1.3 What are the things that are prone to being fettered? And what is the fetter? The eye is something that’s prone to being fettered. The desire and greed for it is the fetter.
- 1.6 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is something that’s prone to being fettered. The desire and greed for it is the fetter. These are called the things that are prone to being fettered, and this is the fetter.”

SN 35.110

## Things Prone to Being Grasped

*Upādānīyasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, I will teach you the things that are prone to being grasped, and the grasping. Listen ...
- 1.3 What are the things that are prone to being grasped? And what is the grasping? The eye is something that’s prone to being grasped. The desire and greed for it is the grasping.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is something that's 1.6  
prone to being grasped. The desire and greed for it is the grasping.  
These are called the things that are prone to being grasped, and  
this is the grasping."

SN 35.111

## Complete Understanding of the Interior

*Ajjhattikāyatanaparijānanasutta*

"Mendicants, without directly knowing and completely understand- 1.1  
ing the eye, without dispassion for it and giving it up, you can't end  
suffering.

Without directly knowing and completely understanding the 1.2  
ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, without dispassion for it  
and giving it up, you can't end suffering.

By directly knowing and completely understanding the eye, 1.7  
having dispassion for it and giving it up, you can end suffering.

By directly knowing and completely understanding the ear ... 1.8  
nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, having dispassion for it and  
giving it up, you can end suffering."

SN 35.112

## Complete Understanding of the Exterior

*Bāhirāyatanaparijānanasutta*

"Mendicants, without directly knowing and completely understand- 1.1  
ing sights ... sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas, with-  
out dispassion for them and giving them up, you can't end suffering.

By directly knowing and completely understanding sights ... 1.7  
sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas, having dispassion  
for them and giving them up, you can end suffering."

SN 35.113

## Listening In

*Upassutisutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying at Nātika in the brick house. Then while the Buddha was in private retreat he spoke this exposition of the teaching:
- 1.3 “Eye consciousness arises dependent on the eye and sights. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. Craving is a condition for grasping. Grasping is a condition for continued existence. Continued existence is a condition for rebirth. Rebirth is a condition for old age and death, sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress to come to be. That is how this entire mass of suffering originates.
- 1.11 Ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...
- 1.12 Mind consciousness arises dependent on the mind and ideas. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. Craving is a condition for grasping. Grasping is a condition for continued existence. Continued existence is a condition for rebirth. Rebirth is a condition for old age and death, sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress to come to be. That is how this entire mass of suffering originates.
- 2.1 Eye consciousness arises dependent on the eye and sights. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. When that craving fades away and ceases with nothing left over, grasping ceases. When grasping ceases, continued existence ceases. When continued existence ceases, rebirth ceases. When rebirth ceases, old age and death, sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress cease. That is how this entire mass of suffering ceases.
- 2.9 Ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...
- 2.10 Mind consciousness arises dependent on the mind and ideas. The meeting of the three is contact. Contact is a condition for feeling. Feeling is a condition for craving. When that craving fades

away and ceases with nothing left over, grasping ceases. When grasping ceases ... That is how this entire mass of suffering ceases.”

Now at that time a certain monk was standing listening in on 3.1  
the Buddha. The Buddha saw him and said, “Monk, did you hear that exposition of the teaching?”

“Yes, sir.” 3.5

“Learn that exposition of the teaching, memorize it, and remem- 3.6  
ber it. That exposition of the teaching is beneficial and relates to the fundamentals of the spiritual life.”

# The Chapter on the World and the Kinds of Sensual Stimulation

SN 35.114

## Māra's Snare (1st)

*Paṭhamamārapāśasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, there are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, they’re called a mendicant trapped in Māra’s lair, fallen under Māra’s sway, and caught in Māra’s snare. They’re bound by Māra’s bonds, and the Wicked One can do with them what he wants.
- 2.1     There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ...
- 3.1     There are ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keep clinging to them, they’re called a mendicant trapped in Māra’s lair, fallen under Māra’s sway, and caught in Māra’s snare. They’re bound by Māra, and the Wicked One can do with them what he wants.
- 4.1     There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn’t approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, they’re called a mendicant not trapped in Māra’s lair, not fallen under Māra’s sway, and



released from Māra's snare. They're free from Māra's bonds, and the Wicked One cannot do with them what he wants.

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... 5.1

There are ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, they're called a mendicant not trapped in Māra's lair, not fallen under Māra's sway, and released from Māra's snare. They're free from Māra's bonds, and the Wicked One cannot do with them what he wants." 6.1

SN 35.115

## Māra's Snare (2nd)

*Dutiyamārapāśasutta*

"Mendicants, there are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, they're called a mendicant who is bound when it comes to sights known by the eye. They're trapped in Māra's lair, fallen under Māra's sway, and caught in Māra's snare. They're bound by Māra's bonds, and the Wicked One can do with them what he wants. 1.1

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, they're called a mendicant who is bound when it comes to ideas known by the mind. They're trapped in Māra's lair, fallen under Māra's sway, and caught in Māra's snare. They're bound by Māra's bonds, and the Wicked One can do with them what he wants. 2.1

There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, they're called a mendicant not trapped in Māra's lair, not fallen under Māra's sway, and 3.1

released from Māra's snare. They're free from Māra's bonds, and the Wicked One cannot do with them what he wants.

- 4.1 There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, they're called a mendicant not trapped in Māra's lair, not fallen under Māra's sway, and released from Māra's snare. They're free from Māra's bonds, and the Wicked One cannot do with them what he wants."

SN 35.116

## Traveling to the End of the World

*Lokantagamanasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, I say it's not possible to know or see or reach the end of the world by traveling. But I also say there's no making an end of suffering without reaching the end of the world."
- 1.3 When he had spoken, the Blessed One got up from his seat and entered his dwelling.
- 1.4 Soon after the Buddha left, those mendicants considered, "The Buddha gave this brief passage for recitation, then entered his dwelling without explaining the meaning in detail. ... Who can explain in detail the meaning of this brief passage for recitation given by the Buddha?"
- 2.1 Then those mendicants thought, "This Venerable Ānanda is praised by the Buddha and esteemed by his sensible spiritual companions. He is capable of explaining in detail the meaning of this brief passage for recitation given by the Buddha. Let's go to him, and ask him about this matter."
- 3.1 Then those mendicants went to Ānanda and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, they sat down to one side. They told him what had happened, and said, "May Venerable Ānanda please explain this."

“Reverends, suppose there was a person in need of heartwood. 5.1  
And while wandering in search of heartwood he’d come across a  
large tree standing with heartwood. But he’d pass over the roots  
and trunk, imagining that the heartwood should be sought in the  
branches and leaves.

Such is the consequence for the venerables. Though you were 5.2  
face to face with the Buddha, you overlooked him, imagining that  
you should ask me about this matter. For he is the Buddha, the  
one who knows and sees. He is vision, he is knowledge, he is the  
manifestation of principle, he is the manifestation of divinity. He is  
the teacher, the proclaimer, the elucidator of meaning, the bestower  
of freedom from death, the lord of truth, the Realized One. That  
was the time to approach the Buddha and ask about this matter.  
You should have remembered it in line with the Buddha’s answer.”

“Certainly he is the Buddha, the one who knows and sees. He is 6.1  
vision, he is knowledge, he is the manifestation of principle, he is  
the manifestation of divinity. He is the teacher, the proclaimer, the  
elucidator of meaning, the bestower of freedom from death, the  
lord of truth, the Realized One. That was the time to approach the  
Buddha and ask about this matter. We should have remembered it  
in line with the Buddha’s answer.

Still, Venerable Ānanda is praised by the Buddha and esteemed 6.5  
by his sensible spiritual companions. You are capable of explaining  
in detail the meaning of this brief passage for recitation given by  
the Buddha. Please explain this, if it’s no trouble.”

“Then listen and apply your mind well, I will speak.” 7.1

“Yes, reverend,” they replied. Ānanda said this: 7.2

“Reverends, the Buddha gave this brief passage for recitation, 8.1  
then entered his dwelling without explaining the meaning in detail:

‘Mendicants, I say it’s not possible to know or see or reach the 8.2  
end of the world by traveling. But I also say there’s no making an  
end of suffering without reaching the end of the world.’

This is how I understand the detailed meaning of this passage 8.4  
for recitation.

- 8.5 Whatever in the world through which you perceive the world and conceive the world is called the world in the training of the Noble One. And through what in the world do you perceive the world and conceive the world?
- 8.8 Through the eye in the world you perceive the world and conceive the world. Through the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind in the world you perceive the world and conceive the world.
- 8.14 Whatever in the world through which you perceive the world and conceive the world is called the world in the training of the Noble One.
- 8.16 When the Buddha gave this brief passage for recitation, then entered his dwelling without explaining the meaning in detail:
- 8.17 ‘Mendicants, I say it’s not possible to know or see or reach the end of the world by traveling. But I also say there’s no making an end of suffering without reaching the end of the world.’
- 8.19 That is how I understand the detailed meaning of this summary.
- 8.20 If you wish, you may go to the Buddha and ask him about this. You should remember it in line with the Buddha’s answer.”
- 9.1 “Yes, reverend,” replied those mendicants. Then they rose from their seats and went to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and told him what had happened.
- 10.1 Then they said, “And Ānanda explained the meaning to us in this manner, with these words and phrases.”
- 11.1 “Mendicants, Ānanda is astute, he has great wisdom. If you came to me and asked this question, I would answer it in exactly the same way as Ānanda. That is what it means, and that’s how you should remember it.”

SN 35.117

## The Kinds of Sensual Stimulation

*Kāmaguṇasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, before my awakening—when I was still unawakened but intent on awakening—I thought: ‘My mind might often stray

towards the five kinds of sensual stimulation that I formerly experienced—which have passed, ceased, and perished—or to those in the present, or in the future a little.’

Then it occurred to me: ‘In my own way I should practice diligence, mindfulness, and protecting the mind regarding the five kinds of sensual stimulation that I formerly experienced—which have passed, ceased, and perished.’ 1.3

So, mendicants, your minds might also often stray towards the five kinds of sensual stimulation that you formerly experienced—which have passed, ceased, and perished—or to those in the present, or in the future a little. So in your own way you should practice diligence, mindfulness, and protecting the mind regarding the five kinds of sensual stimulation that you formerly experienced—which have passed, ceased, and perished. 1.5

So you should understand that dimension where the eye ceases and perception of sights fades away. You should understand that dimension where the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ceases and perception of ideas fades away.” 1.7

When he had spoken, the Blessed One got up from his seat and entered his dwelling. 1.10

Soon after the Buddha left, those mendicants considered, “The Buddha gave this brief summary, then entered his dwelling without explaining the meaning in detail. ... Who can explain in detail the meaning of this brief summary given by the Buddha?” 2.1

Then those mendicants thought, “This Venerable Ānanda is praised by the Buddha and esteemed by his sensible spiritual companions. He is capable of explaining in detail the meaning of this brief summary given by the Buddha. Let’s go to him, and ask him about this matter.” 3.1

Then those mendicants went to Ānanda, and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, they sat down to one side. They told him what had happened, and said, “May Venerable Ānanda please explain this.” 4.1

- 6.1 “Reverends, suppose there was a person in need of heartwood.  
...”
- 6.2 “Please explain this, if it’s no trouble.”
- 7.1 “Then listen and apply your mind well, I will speak.”
- 7.2 “Yes, reverend,” they replied. Ānanda said this:
- 8.1 “Reverends, the Buddha gave this brief summary, then entered his dwelling without explaining the meaning in detail:
- 8.2 ‘So you should understand that dimension where the eye ceases and perception of sights fades away. You should understand that dimension where the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ceases and perception of ideas fades away.’
- 8.4 And this is how I understand the detailed meaning of this summary.
- 8.5 The Buddha was referring to the cessation of the six sense fields when he said: ‘So you should understand that dimension where the eye ceases and perception of sights fades away. You should understand that dimension where the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ceases and perception of ideas fades away.’
- 8.8 The Buddha gave this brief summary, then entered his dwelling without explaining the meaning in detail. And this is how I understand the detailed meaning of this summary.
- 8.12 If you wish, you may go to the Buddha and ask him about this. You should remember it in line with the Buddha’s answer.”
- 9.1 “Yes, reverend,” replied those mendicants. Then they rose from their seats and went to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and told him what had happened.
- 10.1 Then they said, “And Ānanda explained the meaning to us in this manner, with these words and phrases.”
- 11.1 “Mendicants, Ānanda is astute, he has great wisdom. If you came to me and asked this question, I would answer it in exactly the same way as Ānanda. That is what it means, and that’s how you should remember it.”

SN 35.118

## The Question of Sakka

*Sakkapañhasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha, on the Vulture's Peak Mountain. And then Sakka, lord of gods, went up to the Buddha, bowed, stood to one side, and said to him: 1.1

“What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life? What is the cause, what is the reason why some sentient beings are fully extinguished in the present life?” 1.3

“Lord of gods, there are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, their consciousness relies on that and grasps it. A mendicant with grasping does not become extinguished. 2.1

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, their consciousness relies on that and grasps it. A mendicant with grasping does not become extinguished. That's the cause, that's the reason why some sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life. 3.1

There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, their consciousness doesn't rely on that and grasp it. A mendicant free of grasping becomes extinguished. 4.1

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, their consciousness doesn't rely on that and grasp it. A mendicant free of grasping becomes extinguished. That's 5.1

the cause, that's the reason why some sentient beings are fully extinguished in the present life."

SN 35.119

## The Question of Pañcasikha

*Pañcasikhasutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha, on the Vulture's Peak Mountain. And then the centaur Pañcasikha went up to the Buddha, bowed, stood to one side, and said to him:
- 1.3 "What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life? What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings are fully extinguished in the present life?"
- 1.5 "Pañcasikha, there are sights known by the eye ...
- 1.6 ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, their consciousness relies on that and grasps it. A mendicant with grasping does not become extinguished. That's the cause, that's the reason why some sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life.
- 2.1 There are sights known by the eye ...
- 2.2 ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, their consciousness doesn't rely on that and grasp it. A mendicant free of grasping becomes extinguished. That's the cause, that's the reason why some sentient beings are fully extinguished in the present life."



SN 35.120

## Sāriputta and the Pupil

*Sāriputtasaddhivihārikasutta*

At one time Venerable Sāriputta was staying near Sāvattṥi in Jeta's 1.1  
Grove, Anāthapiṇḍika's monastery. Then a certain mendicant went  
up to Venerable Sāriputta, and exchanged greetings with him.

When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat 1.3  
down to one side, and said to him, "Reverend Sāriputta, a men-  
dicant pupil of mine has resigned the training and returned to a  
lesser life."

"That's how it is, reverend, when someone doesn't guard the 2.1  
sense doors, eats too much, and is not committed to wakefulness.  
It's quite impossible for such a mendicant to maintain the full and  
pure spiritual life for the rest of their life. But it is quite possible for  
a mendicant to maintain the full and pure spiritual life for the rest  
of their life if they guard the sense doors, eat in moderation, and  
are committed to wakefulness.

And how does someone guard the sense doors? When a mendi- 3.1  
cant sees a sight with the eyes, they don't get caught up in the fea-  
tures and details. If the faculty of sight were left unrestrained, bad  
unskillful qualities of covetousness and displeasure would become  
overwhelming. For this reason, they practice restraint, protecting  
the faculty of sight, and achieving its restraint. When they hear a  
sound with their ears ... When they smell an odor with their nose  
... When they taste a flavor with their tongue ... When they feel  
a touch with their body ... When they know an idea with their  
mind, they don't get caught up in the features and details. If the  
faculty of mind were left unrestrained, bad unskillful qualities of  
covetousness and displeasure would become overwhelming. For  
this reason, they practice restraint, protecting the faculty of mind,  
and achieving its restraint. That's how someone guards the sense  
doors.

- 4.1 And how does someone eat in moderation? It's when a mendicant reflects rationally on the food that they eat: 'Not for fun, indulgence, adornment, or decoration, but only to sustain this body, to avoid harm, and to support spiritual practice. In this way, I shall put an end to old discomfort and not give rise to new discomfort, and I will live blamelessly and at ease.' That's how someone eats in moderation.
- 5.1 And how is someone committed to wakefulness? It's when a mendicant practices walking and sitting meditation by day, purifying their mind from obstacles. In the evening, they continue to practice walking and sitting meditation. In the middle of the night, they lie down in the lion's posture—on the right side, placing one foot on top of the other—mindful and aware, and focused on the time of getting up. In the last part of the night, they get up and continue to practice walking and sitting meditation, purifying their mind from obstacles. That's how someone is committed to wakefulness.
- 5.7 So you should train like this: 'We will guard the sense doors, eat in moderation, and be committed to wakefulness.' That's how you should train."

SN 35.121

## Advice to Rāhula

*Rāhulovādasutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Sāvattthī in Jeta's Grove, Anāthapiṇḍika's monastery.
- 1.2 Then as he was in private retreat this thought came to his mind, "The qualities that ripen in freedom have ripened in Rāhula. Why don't I lead him further to the ending of defilements?"
- 1.5 Then the Buddha robed up in the morning and, taking his bowl and robe, wandered for alms in Sāvattthī. After the meal, on his return from almsround, he addressed Venerable Rāhula, "Rāhula,

get your sitting cloth. Let's go to the Dark Forest for the day's meditation."

"Yes, sir," replied Rāhula. Taking his sitting cloth he followed 1.9  
behind the Buddha.

Now at that time many thousands of deities followed the Bud- 2.1  
dha, thinking, "Today the Buddha will lead Rāhula further to the  
ending of defilements!"

Then the Buddha plunged deep into the Dark Forest and sat 2.3  
at the root of a tree on the seat spread out. Rāhula bowed to the  
Buddha and sat down to one side. The Buddha said to him:

"What do you think, Rāhula? Is the eye permanent or imper- 3.1  
manent?"

"Impermanent, sir." 4.1

"But if it's impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?" 5.1

"Suffering, sir." 6.1

"But if it's impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be 7.1  
regarded thus: 'This is mine, I am this, this is my self'?"

"No, sir." 8.1

"Are sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact permanent or 9.1  
impermanent?"

"Impermanent, sir." ... 14.1

"Anything included in feeling, perception, choices, and con- 15.1  
sciousness that arises conditioned by eye contact: is that per-  
manent or impermanent?"

"Impermanent, sir." 16.1

"But if it's impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?" 17.1

"Suffering, sir." 18.1

"But if it's impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be 19.1  
regarded thus: 'This is mine, I am this, this is my self'?"

"No, sir." 20.1

"Is the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind permanent or 21.1  
impermanent?"

"Impermanent, sir." 34.1

"But if it's impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?" 35.1

- 36.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 37.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”
- 38.1 “No, sir.”
- 39.1 “Are ideas ... mind consciousness ... mind contact permanent or impermanent?”
- 44.1 “Impermanent, sir.” ...
- 45.1 “Anything included in feeling, perception, choices, and consciousness that arises conditioned by mind contact: is that permanent or impermanent?”
- 46.1 “Impermanent, sir.”
- 47.1 “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?”
- 48.1 “Suffering, sir.”
- 49.1 “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”
- 50.1 “No, sir.”
- 51.1 “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact. And they become disillusioned with anything included in feeling, perception, choices, and consciousness that arises conditioned by eye contact.
- 51.2 They grow disillusioned with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...
- 52.1 They grow disillusioned with the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact. And they grow disillusioned with anything included in feeling, perception, choices, and consciousness that arises conditioned by mind contact.
- 52.2 Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.
- 52.3 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’”
- 53.1 That is what the Buddha said. Satisfied, Venerable Rāhula was happy with what the Buddha said. And while this discourse was

being spoken, Rāhula's mind was freed from defilements by not grasping.

And the stainless, immaculate vision of the Dhamma arose in those thousands of deities: 53.4

“Everything that has a beginning has an end.” 53.5

SN 35.122

## Things Prone to Being Fettered

*Samyojaniyadhammasutta*

“Mendicants, I will teach you the things that are prone to being fettered, and the fetter. Listen ... 1.1

What are the things that are prone to being fettered? And what is the fetter? There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. These are called the things that are prone to being fettered. The desire and greed for them is the fetter. 1.3

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. These are called the things that are prone to being fettered. The desire and greed for them is the fetter.” 1.7

SN 35.123

## Things Prone to Being Grasped

*Upādāniyadhammasutta*

“Mendicants, I will teach you the things that are prone to being grasped, and the grasping. Listen ... 1.1

What are the things that are prone to being grasped? And what is the grasping? There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. These are called the things that are prone to being grasped. The desire and greed for them is the grasping. 1.3

- 1.7      There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. These are called the things that are prone to being grasped. The desire and greed for them is the grasping.”

# The Chapter on Householders

SN 35.124

At Vesālī

*Vesālīsutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Vesālī, at the Great Wood, 1.1  
in the hall with the peaked roof. Then the householder Ugga of  
Vesālī went up to the Buddha, sat down to one side, and said to  
him:

“What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient 1.3  
beings aren’t fully extinguished in the present life? What is the  
cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings are fully  
extinguished in the present life?”

“Householder, there are sights known by the eye that are likable, 2.1  
desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant  
approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, their conscious-  
ness relies on that and grasps it. A mendicant with grasping does  
not become extinguished.

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known 2.4  
by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual,  
and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps cling-  
ing to them, their consciousness relies on that and grasps it. A  
mendicant with grasping does not become extinguished.

- 2.8 That's the cause, that's the reason why some sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life.
- 3.1 There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, their consciousness doesn't rely on that and grasp it. A mendicant free of grasping becomes extinguished.
- 3.4 There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, their consciousness doesn't rely on that and grasp it. A mendicant free of grasping becomes extinguished.
- 3.8 That's the cause, that's the reason why some sentient beings are fully extinguished in the present life."

SN 35.125

## In the Land of the Vajjis

*Vajjisutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying in the land of the Vajjis at Elephant Village. Then the householder Ugga of Elephant Village went up to the Buddha, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.3 "What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life? What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings are fully extinguished in the present life?" ...
- (Tell in full as in the previous discourse.)*



SN 35.126

## At NāḲandā

*NāḲandasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near NāḲandā in Pāvārika's 1.1  
mango grove.

Then the householder Upāli went up to the Buddha ... and 1.2  
asked him, "What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some  
sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life? What  
is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings are  
fully extinguished in the present life?" ...

(*Tell in full as in SN 35.124.*)

SN 35.127

## With Bhāradvāja

*Bhāradvājasutta*

At one time Venerable Bhāradvāja the Alms-gatherer was staying 1.1  
near Kosambī, in Ghosita's Monastery. Then King Udena went  
up to Bhāradvāja the Alms-gatherer and exchanged greetings with  
him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat  
down to one side, and said to him:

"Master Bhāradvāja, there are these young monks who are youth- 1.4  
ful, with pristine black hair, blessed with youth, in the prime of life;  
and they've never played around with sensual pleasures. What is  
the cause, what is the reason why they practice the full and pure  
spiritual life as long as they live, maintaining it for a long time?"

"Great king, this has been stated by the Blessed One, who knows 1.5  
and sees, the perfected one, the fully awakened Buddha:

'Please, monks, think of women your mother's age as your 1.6  
mother. Think of women your sister's age as your sister. And think  
of women your daughter's age as your daughter.'

- 1.7 This is a cause, great king, this is a reason why these young monks practice the full and pure spiritual life as long as they live, maintaining it for a long time.”
- 2.1 “But Master Bhāradvāja, the mind is wanton. Sometimes thoughts of desire come up even for women your mother’s age, your sister’s age, or your daughter’s age. Is there another cause, another reason why these young monks live the full and pure spiritual life for their entire life?”
- 3.1 “Great king, this has been stated by the Blessed One, who knows and sees, the perfected one, the fully awakened Buddha:
- 3.2 ‘Please, monks, examine your own body up from the soles of the feet and down from the tips of the hairs, wrapped in skin and full of many kinds of filth. In this body there is head hair, body hair, nails, teeth, skin, flesh, sinews, bones, bone marrow, kidneys, heart, liver, diaphragm, spleen, lungs, intestines, mesentery, undigested food, feces, bile, phlegm, pus, blood, sweat, fat, tears, grease, saliva, snot, synovial fluid, urine.’
- 3.4 This is also a cause, great king, this is a reason why these young monks live the full and pure spiritual life for their entire life, maintaining it for a long time.”
- 3.5 “This is easy to do for those mendicants who have developed their physical endurance, ethics, mind, and wisdom. But it’s hard to do for those mendicants who have not developed their physical endurance, ethics, mind, and wisdom. Sometimes I plan to focus on something as ugly, but only its beauty comes to mind. Is there another cause, another reason why these young monks live the full and pure spiritual life for their entire life?”
- 4.1 “Great king, this has been stated by the Blessed One, who knows and sees, the perfected one, the fully awakened Buddha:
- 4.2 ‘Please, monks, live with sense doors guarded. When you see a sight with your eyes, don’t get caught up in the features and details. If the faculty of sight were left unrestrained, bad unskillful qualities of covetousness and displeasure would become overwhelming. For this reason, practice restraint, protect the faculty of sight, and

achieve its restraint. When you hear a sound with your ears ... When you smell an odor with your nose ... When you taste a flavor with your tongue ... When you feel a touch with your body ... When you know an idea with your mind, don't get caught up in the features and details. If the faculty of mind were left unrestrained, bad unskillful qualities of covetousness and displeasure would become overwhelming. For this reason, practice restraint, protect the faculty of mind, and achieve its restraint.'

This is also a cause, great king, this is a reason why these young monks practice the full and pure spiritual life as long as they live, maintaining it for a long time. 4.11

"It's incredible, Master Bhāradvāja, it's amazing! How well this was said by the Buddha! This is the real cause, this is the reason why these young monks practice the full and pure spiritual life as long as they live, maintaining it for a long time. 5.1

For sometimes I too enter the harem with unprotected body, speech, mind, mindfulness, and sense faculties. At those times powerful thoughts of desire get the better of me. But sometimes I enter the harem with protected body, speech, mind, mindfulness, and sense faculties. At those times such thoughts of desire don't get the better of me. 5.4

Excellent, Master Bhāradvāja! Excellent! As if he were righting the overturned, or revealing the hidden, or pointing out the path to the lost, or lighting a lamp in the dark so people with clear eyes can see what's there, Master Bhāradvāja has made the teaching clear in many ways. I go for refuge to the Buddha, to the teaching, and to the mendicant Saṅgha. From this day forth, may Master Bhāradvāja remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life." 5.6

SN 35.128

## With Soṇa

*Soṇasutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha, in the Bamboo Grove, the squirrels' feeding ground.
- 1.2 Then the householder Soṇa went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.3 “What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life? What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings are fully extinguished in the present life?” ...
- (Tell in full as in SN 35.118.)*

SN 35.129

## With Ghosita

*Ghositasutta*

- 1.1 At one time Venerable Ānanda was staying near Kosambī, in Ghosita's Monastery. Then the householder Ghosita went up to Venerable Ānanda, and said to him:
- 1.3 “Honorable Ānanda, they speak of ‘the diversity of elements’. In what way did the Buddha speak of the diversity of elements?”
- 1.5 “Householder, the eye element is found, as are agreeable sights, and eye consciousness. Pleasant feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as pleasant. The eye element is found, as are disagreeable sights, and eye consciousness. Painful feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as painful. The eye element is found, as are sights that are a basis for equanimity, and eye consciousness. Neutral feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as neutral.
- 1.11 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind element is found, as are agreeable ideas, and mind consciousness. Pleasant feeling

arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as pleasant. The mind element is found, as are disagreeable ideas, and mind consciousness. Painful feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as painful. The mind element is found, as are ideas that are a basis for equanimity, and mind consciousness. Neutral feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as neutral.

This is how the Buddha spoke of the diversity of elements.” 1.23

SN 35.130

## With Hāliddikāni

*Hāliddikānisutta*

At one time Venerable Mahākaccāna was staying in the land of the 1.1  
Avantis near Kuraragghara on Steep Mountain.

Then the householder Hāliddikāni went up to Venerable Ma- 1.2  
hākaccāna ... and asked him, “Sir, this was said by the Buddha:  
‘Diversity of elements gives rise to diversity of contacts, and di-  
versity of contacts gives rise to diversity of feelings.’ How does  
diversity of elements give rise to diversity of contacts, and diversity  
of contacts gives rise to diversity of feelings?”

“Householder, it’s when a mendicant sees a sight with the eye 1.6  
and understands it to be agreeable. There is eye consciousness;  
and pleasant feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experi-  
enced as pleasant. Then they see a sight and understand it to be  
disagreeable. There is eye consciousness; and painful feeling arises  
dependent on a contact to be experienced as painful. Then they see  
a sight and understand it to be a basis for equanimity. There is eye  
consciousness; and neutral feeling arises dependent on a contact  
to be experienced as neutral.

Furthermore, a mendicant hears a sound with the ear ... smells 2.1  
an odor with the nose ... tastes a flavor with the tongue ... feels a  
touch with the body ... knows an idea with the mind and under-  
stands it to be agreeable. There is mind consciousness; and pleasant  
feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as pleasant.

Then they know an idea and understand it to be disagreeable. There is mind consciousness; and painful feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as painful. Then they know an idea and understand it to be a basis for equanimity. Neutral feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as neutral.

- 2.11 That's how diversity of elements gives rise to diversity of contacts, and diversity of contacts gives rise to diversity of feelings."

SN 35.131

## Nakula's Father

*Nakulapitusutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying in the land of the Bhaggas at Crocodile Hill, in the deer park at Bhesakala's Wood.

- 1.2 Then the householder Nakula's father went up to the Buddha ... and asked him, "What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life? What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some sentient beings are fully extinguished in the present life?"

- 1.5 "Householder, there are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, their consciousness relies on that and grasps it. A mendicant with grasping does not become extinguished. There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, their consciousness relies on that and grasps it. A mendicant with grasping does not become extinguished. That's the cause, that's the reason why some sentient beings aren't fully extinguished in the present life.

- 2.1 There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, their consciousness doesn't rely on that and grasp it. A mendicant free of grasping

becomes extinguished. There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, their consciousness doesn't rely on that and grasp it. A mendicant free of grasping becomes extinguished. That's the cause, that's the reason why some sentient beings are fully extinguished in the present life."

SN 35.132

## With Lohicca

*Lohiccasutta*

At one time Venerable Mahākaccāna was staying in the land of the 1.1  
Avantis in a wilderness hut near Makkarakāṭa.

Then several youths, students of the brahmin Lohicca, ap- 1.2  
proached Mahākaccāna's wilderness hut while collecting firewood. They walked and wandered all around the hut, making a dreadful racket and all kinds of jeers: "These shavelings, fake ascetics, primitives, black spawn from the feet of our kinsman, the Lord! They're honored, respected, revered, venerated, and esteemed by those who pretend to inherit Vedic culture."

And then Mahākaccāna left his dwelling and said to those brah- 1.4  
min students, "Students, stop being so noisy. I will speak to you on the teaching."

When this was said, the students fell silent. Then Mahākaccāna 1.7  
recited these verses for them.

"The brahmins of old championed ethics 2.1  
and remembered the ancient traditions.  
Their sense doors were guarded, well protected,  
and they had mastered anger.

Those brahmins who remembered 3.1  
the ancient traditions  
enjoyed virtue and absorption.

- 4.1 But these have lost their way. Claiming to recite,  
they live out of balance,  
judging everyone by their clan.  
Mastered by anger, they take up many arms,  
attacking both the strong and the weak.
- 5.1 All is vain for someone  
who doesn't guard the sense doors,  
like the wealth a person finds in a dream.  
Fasting, sleeping on bare ground,  
bathing at dawn, the three Vedas,
- 6.1 rough hides, dreadlocks, and dirt,  
hymns, precepts and observances,  
and fervent austerities,  
those fake bent staffs,  
and rinsing with water.  
These emblems of the brahmins  
are only used to generate profits.
- 7.1 A mind that's serene,  
clear and undisturbed,  
kind to all creatures:  
that's the path to attainment of Brahmā!"
- 8.1 Then those students, offended and upset, went to the brahmin  
Lohicca and said to him, "Please, master, you should know this. The  
ascetic Mahākaccāna condemns and rejects outright the hymns of  
the brahmins!"
- 8.3 When they said this, Lohicca was offended and upset. Then he  
thought, "But it wouldn't be appropriate for me to abuse or insult  
the ascetic Mahākaccāna solely because of what I've heard from  
these students. Why don't I go and ask him about it?"
- 9.1 Then the brahmin Lohicca together with those students went  
to Venerable Mahākaccāna and exchanged greetings with him.



When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat 9.2  
down to one side and said to him, “Master Kaccāna, did several  
young students of mine come by here collecting firewood?”

“They did, brahmin.” 9.4

“But did you have some discussion with them?” 9.5

“I did.” 9.6

“But what kind of discussion did you have with them?” 9.7

“This is the discussion I had with these students.” And he re- 9.8  
peated the verses in full.

“Master Kaccāna spoke of someone who doesn’t guard the sense 12.1  
doors. How do you define someone who doesn’t guard the sense  
doors?”

“Brahmin, take someone who sees a sight with their eyes. If 12.3  
it’s pleasant they hold on to it, but if it’s unpleasant they dislike it.  
They live with mindfulness of the body unestablished and their  
heart restricted. And they don’t truly understand the freedom of  
heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful  
qualities cease without anything left over.

When they hear a sound with their ears ... 12.5

When they smell an odor with their nose ... 12.6

When they taste a flavor with their tongue ... 12.7

When they feel a touch with their body ... 12.8

When they know an idea with their mind, if it’s pleasant they 12.9  
hold on to it, but if it’s unpleasant they dislike it. They live with  
mindfulness of the body unestablished and a limited heart. And  
they don’t truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by  
wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without  
anything left over.

That’s how someone doesn’t guard the sense doors.” 12.11

“It’s incredible, Master Kaccāna, it’s amazing! How accurately 12.12  
you’ve explained someone whose sense doors are unguarded!

You also spoke of someone who does guard the sense doors. 13.1  
How do you define someone who does guard the sense doors?”

13.3 “Brahmin, take a mendicant who sees a sight with their eyes. If it’s pleasant they don’t hold on to it, and if it’s unpleasant they don’t dislike it. They live with mindfulness of the body established and a limitless heart. And they truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

13.5 When they hear a sound with their ears ...

13.6 When they smell an odor with their nose ...

13.7 When they taste a flavor with their tongue ...

13.8 When they feel a touch with their body ...

13.9 When they know an idea with their mind, if it’s pleasant they don’t hold on to it, and if it’s unpleasant they don’t dislike it. They live with mindfulness of the body established and a limitless heart. And they truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

13.11 That’s how someone guards the sense doors.”

14.1 “It’s incredible, Master Kaccāna, it’s amazing! How accurately you’ve explained someone whose sense doors are guarded! Excellent, Master Kaccāna! Excellent! As if he were righting the overturned, or revealing the hidden, or pointing out the path to the lost, or lighting a lamp in the dark so people with clear eyes can see what’s there, Master Kaccāna has made the teaching clear in many ways. I go for refuge to the Buddha, to the teaching, and to the mendicant Saṅgha. From this day forth, may Master Kaccāna remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life.

14.7 Please come to my family just as you go to the families of the lay followers in Makkarakaṭṭa. The brahmin boys and girls there will bow to you, rise in your presence, and give you a seat and water. That will be for their lasting welfare and happiness.”

SN 35.133

## Verahaccāni

*Verahaccānisutta*

At one time Venerable Udāyī was staying near Kāmaṇḍā in the 1.1  
brahmin Todeyya's mango grove.

Then a boy who was a student of the brahmin lady of the Vera- 1.2  
haccāni clan went up to Udāyī and exchanged greetings with him.  
When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down  
to one side. Udāyī educated, encouraged, fired up, and inspired  
that student with a Dhamma talk.

Then that student went to the brahmin lady of the Verahaccāni 1.5  
clan and said to her, "Please, madam, you should know this. The  
ascetic Udāyī teaches Dhamma that's good in the beginning, good  
in the middle, and good in the end, meaningful and well-phrased.  
And he reveals a spiritual practice that's entirely full and pure."

"Then, student, invite him in my name for tomorrow's meal." 2.1

"Yes, madam," he replied. He went to Udāyī and said, "Sir, might 2.2  
Master Udāyī please accept an offering of tomorrow's meal from  
my teacher's wife, the brahmin lady of the Verahaccāni clan." Udāyī  
consented with silence.

Then when the night had passed, Udāyī robed up in the morning 2.5  
and, taking his bowl and robe, went to the brahmin lady's home,  
and sat down on the seat spread out. Then the brahmin lady served  
and satisfied Udāyī with her own hands with delicious fresh and  
cooked foods.

When Udāyī had eaten and washed his hand and bowl, she put 2.7  
on a pair of shoes, sat on a high seat, covered her head, and said to  
him, "Ascetic, preach the Dhamma."

"There will be an occasion for that, sister," he replied, then got 2.9  
up from his seat and left.

For a second time that student went to Venerable Udāyī ... 3.1

And for a second time that student went to the brahmin lady of 3.4  
the Verahaccāni clan ...

- 4.1 She said to him, “You keep praising the ascetic Udāyī like this. But when I asked him to preach the Dhamma he just said that there would be an occasion for that, and then he got up and left.”
- 4.3 “Madam, that’s because you put on a pair of shoes, sat on a high seat, and covered your head before inviting him to teach. For the masters respect the teaching.”
- 4.6 “Then, student, invite him in my name for tomorrow’s meal.”
- 4.7 “Yes, madam,” he replied. ...
- 5.1 Then the brahmin lady served and satisfied Udāyī with her own hands with delicious fresh and cooked foods.
- 5.3 When Udāyī had eaten and washed his hand and bowl, she took off her shoes, sat on a low seat, uncovered her head, and said to him, “Sir, when what exists do the perfected ones declare that there is pleasure and pain? When what doesn’t exist do the perfected ones not declare that there is pleasure and pain?”
- 6.1 “Sister, when there’s an eye, the perfected ones declare that there is pleasure and pain. When there’s no eye, the perfected ones don’t declare that there is pleasure and pain. When there’s an ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, the perfected ones declare that there is pleasure and pain. When there’s no mind, the perfected ones don’t declare that there is pleasure and pain.”
- 7.1 When he said this, the brahmin lady said to Udāyī, “Excellent, sir! Excellent! As if he were righting the overturned, or revealing the hidden, or pointing out the path to the lost, or lighting a lamp in the dark so people with clear eyes can see what’s there, Venerable Udāyī has made the teaching clear in many ways. I go for refuge to the Buddha, to the teaching, and to the mendicant Saṅgha. From this day forth, may Venerable Udāyī remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life.”

# The Chapter at Devadaha

SN 35.134

## At Devadaha

*Devadahasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying in the land of the Sakyans, near 1.1  
the Sakyan town named Devadaha. There the Buddha addressed  
the mendicants:

“When it comes to the six fields of contact, mendicants, I don’t 1.3  
say that all mendicants have work to do with diligence, nor do I say  
that none of them have work to do with diligence.

I say that, when it comes to the six fields of contact, mendicants 1.4  
don’t have work to do with diligence if they are perfected, with  
defilements ended, having completed the spiritual journey, done  
what had to be done, laid down the burden, achieved their own  
goal, utterly ended the fetters of rebirth, and become rightly freed  
through enlightenment. Why is that?

They’ve done their work with diligence, and are incapable of 1.6  
negligence.

I say that, when it comes to the six fields of contact, mendicants 1.7  
do have work to do with diligence if they are trainees, who haven’t  
achieved their heart’s desire, but live aspiring to the supreme sanc-  
tuary from the yoke. Why is that?

There are sights known by the eye that are pleasant and also 1.9  
those that are unpleasant. Though experiencing them again and  
again they don’t occupy the mind. Their energy is roused up and

unflagging, their mindfulness is established and lucid, their body is tranquil and undisturbed, and their mind is immersed in samādhi. Seeing this fruit of diligence, I say that those mendicants have work to do with diligence when it comes to the six fields of contact. ...

- 1.13 There are ideas known by the mind that are pleasant and also those that are unpleasant. Though experiencing them again and again they don't occupy the mind. Their energy is roused up and unflagging, their mindfulness is established and lucid, their body is tranquil and undisturbed, and their mind is immersed in samādhi. Seeing this fruit of diligence, I say that those mendicants have work to do with diligence when it comes to the six fields of contact."

SN 35.135

## Opportunity

*Khaṇasutta*

- 1.1 "You're fortunate, mendicants, so very fortunate, to have the opportunity to lead the spiritual life. I've seen the hell called 'the six fields of contact'. There, whatever sight you see with your eye is unlikable, not likable; undesirable, not desirable; unpleasant, not pleasant.
- 1.5 Whatever sound you hear ...
- 1.6 Whatever odor you smell ...
- 1.7 Whatever flavor you taste ...
- 1.8 Whatever touch you feel ...
- 1.9 Whatever idea you know with your mind is unlikable, not likable; undesirable, not desirable; unpleasant, not pleasant. You're fortunate, mendicants, so very fortunate, to have the opportunity to lead the spiritual life. I've seen the heaven called 'the six fields of contact'. There, whatever sight you see with your eye is likable, not unlikable; desirable, not undesirable; pleasant, not unpleasant.
- 1.14 Whatever sound ... odor ... flavor ... touch ...
- 1.15 Whatever idea you know with your mind is likable, not unlikable; desirable, not undesirable; pleasant, not unpleasant. You're

fortunate, mendicants, so very fortunate, to have the opportunity to lead the spiritual life.”

SN 35.136

## Liking Sights (1st)

*Paṭhamarūpārāmasutta*

“Mendicants, gods and humans like sights, they love them and enjoy 1.1  
them. But when sights perish, fade away, and cease, gods and  
humans live in suffering.

Gods and humans like sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches 1.3  
... ideas, they love them and enjoy them. But when ideas perish,  
fade away, and cease, gods and humans live in suffering.

The Realized One has truly understood the origin, ending, grat- 1.10  
ification, drawback, and escape of sights, so he doesn’t like, love, or  
enjoy them. When sights perish, fade away, and cease, the Realized  
One lives happily.

The Realized One has truly understood the origin, ending, grat- 1.12  
ification, drawback, and escape of sounds ... smells ... tastes ...  
touches ... ideas, so he doesn’t like, love, or enjoy them. When  
ideas perish, fade away, and cease, the Realized One lives happily.”

That is what the Buddha said. Then the Holy One, the Teacher, 1.18  
went on to say:

“Sights, sounds, tastes, smells, 2.1  
touches and ideas, the lot of them—  
they’re likable, desirable, and pleasurable  
as long as you can say that they exist.

For all the world with its gods, 3.1  
this is what they deem happiness.  
And where they cease  
is deemed as suffering for them.

The noble ones have seen that happiness 4.1

is the cessation of substantial reality.  
This insight by those who see  
contradicts the whole world.

- 5.1      What others say is happiness  
            the noble ones say is suffering.  
            What others say is suffering  
            the noble ones know as happiness.
- 6.1      See, this teaching is hard to understand,  
            it confuses the ignorant.  
            There is darkness for the shrouded;  
            blackness for those who don't see.
- 7.1      But the good are open;  
            like light for those who see.  
            Though close, they do not understand,  
            those fools inexperienced in the teaching.
- 8.1      They're mired in desire to be reborn,  
            flowing along the stream of lives,  
            mired in Māra's sway:  
            this teaching isn't easy for them to understand.
- 9.1      Who, apart from the noble ones,  
            is qualified to understand this state?  
            Having rightly understood this state,  
            the undefiled become fully extinguished."



SN 35.137

## Liking Sights (2nd)

*Dutiyarūpārāmasutta*

“Mendicants, gods and humans like sights, they love them and enjoy 1.1  
them. But when sights perish, fade away, and cease, gods and  
humans live in suffering. ...

The Realized One has truly understood the origin, ending, grat- 1.9  
ification, drawback, and escape of sights, so he doesn’t like, love, or  
enjoy them. When sights perish, fade away, and cease, the Realized  
One lives happily. ...”

SN 35.138

## Not Yours (1st)

*Paṭhamanatumhākasutta*

“Mendicants, give up what’s not yours. Giving it up will be for your 1.1  
welfare and happiness. And what isn’t yours? The eye isn’t yours:  
give it up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind isn’t yours: give it 1.6  
up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness.

Suppose a person was to carry off the grass, sticks, branches, and 1.10  
leaves in this Jeta’s Grove, or burn them, or do what they want with  
them. Would you think: ‘This person is carrying us off, burning  
us, or doing what they want with us?’”

“No, sir. Why is that? Because to us that’s neither self nor be- 1.12  
longing to self.”

“In the same way, the eye isn’t yours: give it up. Giving it up will 1.15  
be for your welfare and happiness.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind isn’t yours: give it 1.17  
up. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness.”

SN 35.139

## Not Yours (2nd)

*Dutiyanatumhākasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, give up what’s not yours. Giving it up will be for your welfare and happiness. And what isn’t yours? Sights aren’t yours: give them up. Giving them up will be for your welfare and happiness.
- 1.6 Sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas aren’t yours: give them up. Giving them up will be for your welfare and happiness.
- 1.12 Suppose a person was to carry off the grass, sticks, branches, and leaves in this Jeta’s Grove ...
- 1.13 In the same way, sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas aren’t yours: give them up. Giving them up will be for your welfare and happiness.”

SN 35.140

## Interior and Cause Are Impermanent

*Ajjhattaaniccahetusutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, the eye is impermanent. The cause and reason that gives rise to the eye is also impermanent. Since the eye is produced by what is impermanent, how could it be permanent?
- 1.4 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is impermanent. The cause and reason that gives rise to the mind is also impermanent. Since the mind is produced by what is impermanent, how could it be permanent?
- 1.10 Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.

They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’” 1.12

SN 35.141

## Interior and Cause Are Suffering

*Ajjhattadukkhahetusutta*

“Mendicants, the eye is suffering. The cause and reason that gives rise to the eye is also suffering. Since the eye is produced by what is suffering, how could it be happiness? 1.1

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is suffering. The cause and reason that gives rise to the mind is also suffering. Since the mind is produced by what is suffering, how could it be happiness? 1.4

Seeing this ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any state of existence.’” 1.10

SN 35.142

## Interior and Cause Are Not-Self

*Ajjhattānattahetusutta*

“Mendicants, the eye is not-self. The cause and reason that gives rise to the eye is also not-self. Since the eye is produced by what is not-self, how could it be self? 1.1

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is not-self. The cause and reason that gives rise to the mind is also not-self. Since the mind is produced by what is not-self, how could it be self? 1.4

Seeing this ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any state of existence.’” 1.10

SN 35.143

## Exterior and Cause Are Impermanent

*Bāhirāniccahetusutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, sights are impermanent. The cause and reason that gives rise to sights is also impermanent. Since sights are produced by what is impermanent, how could they be permanent?
- 1.4 Sounds ...
- 1.5 Smells ...
- 1.6 Tastes ...
- 1.7 Touches ...
- 1.8 Ideas are impermanent. The cause and reason that gives rise to ideas is also impermanent. Since ideas are produced by what is impermanent, how could they be permanent?
- 1.11 Seeing this ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any state of existence.’”

SN 35.144

## Exterior and Cause Are Suffering

*Bāhiradukkhahetusutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, sights are suffering. The cause and reason that gives rise to sights is also suffering. Since sights are produced by what is suffering, how could they be happiness?
- 1.4 Sounds ...
- 1.5 Smells ...
- 1.6 Tastes ...
- 1.7 Touches ...
- 1.8 Ideas are suffering. The cause and reason that gives rise to ideas is also suffering. Since ideas are produced by what is suffering, how could they be happiness?
- 1.11 Seeing this ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any state of existence.’”

SN 35.145

## Exterior and Cause Are Not-Self

*Bāhirānattahetusutta*

“Mendicants, sights are not-self. The cause and reason that gives rise to sights is also not-self. Since sights are produced by what is not-self, how could they be self? 1.1

Sounds ... 1.4

Smells ... 1.5

Tastes ... 1.6

Touches ... 1.7

Thoughts are not-self. The cause and reason that gives rise to ideas is also not-self. Since ideas are produced by what is not-self, how could they be self? 1.8

Seeing this ... Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they're freed. When they're freed, they know they're freed. 1.11

They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’” 1.13

# The Chapter on the Old and the New

SN 35.146

## The Cessation of Action

*Kammanirodhasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, I will teach you old action, new action, the cessation of action, and the practice that leads to the cessation of action. Listen and apply your mind well, I will speak. ...
- 1.3 And what is old action?
- 1.4 The eye is old action. It should be seen as produced by choices and intentions, as something to be felt.
- 1.5 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is old action. It should be seen as produced by choices and intentions, as something to be felt.
- 1.7 This is called old action.
- 1.8 And what is new action?
- 1.9 The deeds you currently perform by way of body, speech, and mind.
- 1.10 This is called new action.
- 1.11 And what is the cessation of action?
- 1.12 When you experience freedom due to the cessation of deeds by body, speech, and mind.
- 1.13 This is called the cessation of action.
- 1.14 And what’s the practice that leads to the cessation of action?

It is simply this noble eightfold path, that is: right view, right 1.15  
thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort,  
right mindfulness, and right immersion.

This is called the practice that leads to the cessation of action. 1.17

So, mendicants, I've taught you old action, new action, the ces- 1.18  
sation of action, and the practice that leads to the cessation of  
action.

Out of compassion, I've done what a teacher should do who 1.19  
wants what's best for their disciples. Here are these roots of trees,  
and here are these empty huts. Practice absorption, mendicants!  
Don't be negligent! Don't regret it later! This is my instruction to  
you."

SN 35.147

## The Impermanent as Conducive to Extinguishment

*Aniccanibbānasappāyasutta*

"Mendicants, I will teach you a practice that's conducive to extin- 1.1  
guishment. Listen ...

And what is that practice that's conducive to extinguishment? 1.3

It's when a mendicant sees that the eye, sights, eye conscious- 1.4  
ness, and eye contact are impermanent. And they see that the  
painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye  
contact is also impermanent.

They see that the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, ideas, 1.5  
mind-consciousness, and mind contact are impermanent. And  
they see that the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises  
conditioned by mind contact is also impermanent.

This is that practice that's conducive to extinguishment." 1.7

SN 35.148

## The Suffering as Conducive to Extinguishment

*Dukkhanibbānasappāyasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, I will teach you a practice that’s conducive to extinguishment. Listen ...
- 1.3 And what is that practice that’s conducive to extinguishment?
- 1.4 It’s when a mendicant sees that the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are suffering. And they see that the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also suffering.
- 1.5 They see that the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, ideas, mind-consciousness, and mind contact are suffering. And they see that the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also suffering.
- 1.7 This is that practice that’s conducive to extinguishment.”

SN 35.149

## Not-Self as Conducive to Extinguishment

*Anattanibbānasappāyasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, I will teach you a practice that’s conducive to extinguishment. Listen ...
- 1.3 And what is that practice that’s conducive to extinguishment?
- 1.4 It’s when a mendicant sees that the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are not-self. And they see that the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also not-self.
- 1.5 They see that the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, ideas, mind-consciousness, and mind contact are not-self. And they see that the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also not-self.
- 1.6 This is that practice that’s conducive to extinguishment.”



SN 35.150

## A Practice Conducive to Extinguishment

*Nibbānasappāyapaṭipadāsutta*

- “Mendicants, I will teach you a practice that’s conducive to extin- 1.1  
guishment. Listen ...
- And what is that practice that’s conducive to extinguishment? 1.3
- What do you think, mendicants? Is the eye permanent or im- 1.4  
permanent?”
- “Impermanent, sir.” 2.1
- “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?” 3.1
- “Suffering, sir.” 4.1
- “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be 5.1  
regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”
- “No, sir.” 6.1
- “Are sights ... eye consciousness ... eye contact ... 7.1
- The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned 9.3  
by mind contact: is that permanent or impermanent?”
- “Impermanent, sir.” 10.1
- “But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?” 11.1
- “Suffering, sir.” 12.1
- “But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be 13.1  
regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”
- “No, sir.” 14.1
- “Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with 15.1  
the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact. And they grow  
disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises  
conditioned by eye contact.
- They grow disillusioned with the ear ... nose ... tongue ... 15.2  
body ... mind ... painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises  
conditioned by mind contact. Being disillusioned, desire fades  
away. When desire fades away they’re freed. ...
- They understand: ‘... there is no return to any state of existence.’ 15.4
- This is that practice that’s conducive to extinguishment.” 15.5

SN 35.151

## A Student

*Antevāsikasutta*

1.1 “Mendicants, this spiritual life is lived without a resident student and without a teaching master. A mendicant who lives with a resident student and a teaching master lives in suffering and discomfort. A mendicant who lives without a resident student and a teaching master lives in happiness and comfort.

1.4 And how does a mendicant who lives with a resident student and a teaching master live in suffering and discomfort?

1.5 When a mendicant sees a sight with the eye, bad, unskillful phenomena arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. Those qualities reside within. Since they have bad unskillful qualities residing within, they’re said to have a resident student. Those qualities master them. Since they’re mastered by bad unskillful qualities, they’re said to have a teaching master.

2.1 Furthermore, when a mendicant hears ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... knows an idea with the mind, bad, unskillful phenomena arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. Those qualities reside within. Since they have bad unskillful qualities residing within, they’re said to have a resident student. Those qualities master them. Since they’re mastered by bad unskillful qualities, they’re said to have a teaching master. That’s how a mendicant who lives with a resident student and a teaching master lives in suffering and discomfort.

4.1 And how does a mendicant who lives without a resident student and a teaching master live in happiness and comfort?

4.2 When a mendicant sees a sight with the eye, bad, unskillful phenomena don’t arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. Those qualities don’t reside within. Since they don’t have bad unskillful qualities residing within, they’re said to not have a resident student. Those qualities don’t master them. Since they’re not mas-

tered by bad unskillful qualities, they're said to not have a teaching master.

Furthermore, when a mendicant hears ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... knows an idea with the mind, bad, unskillful phenomena don't arise: memories and thoughts prone to fetters. Those qualities don't reside within. Since they don't have bad unskillful qualities residing within, they're said to not have a resident student. Those qualities don't master them. Since they're not mastered by bad unskillful qualities, they're said to not have a teaching master.

That's how a mendicant who lives without a resident student and a teaching master lives in happiness and comfort.

This spiritual life is lived without a resident student and without a teaching master. A mendicant who lives with a resident student and a teaching master lives in suffering and discomfort. A mendicant who lives without a resident student and a teaching master lives in happiness and comfort."

SN 35.152

## What's the Purpose of the Spiritual Life?

*Kimatthiyabrahmacariyasutta*

"Mendicants, if wanderers who follow another religion were to ask you: 'Reverends, what's the purpose of leading the spiritual life under the ascetic Gotama?'

You should answer them: 'The purpose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand suffering.'

If wanderers of other religions were to ask you: 'Reverends, what is that suffering?'

You should answer them: 'The eye is suffering. The purpose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand this. Sights ... Eye consciousness ... Eye contact ... The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also suffering. The purpose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand this.'

- 2.11 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also suffering. The purpose of living the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand this. This is that suffering. The purpose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand this.’
- 2.18 When questioned by wanderers of other religions, that’s how you should answer them.”

SN 35.153

## Is There a Method?

*Atthinukhopariyāyasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, is there a method—apart from faith, endorsement, oral tradition, reasoned contemplation, or acceptance of a view after consideration—that a mendicant can rely on to declare their enlightenment? That is: ‘I understand: “Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.””
- 1.3 “Our teachings are rooted in the Buddha. He is our guide and our refuge. Sir, may the Buddha himself please clarify the meaning of this. The mendicants will listen and remember it.”
- 1.4 “Well then, mendicants, listen and apply your mind well, I will speak.”
- 1.5 “Yes, sir,” they replied. The Buddha said this:
- 1.7 “There is a method—apart from faith, endorsement, oral tradition, reasoned contemplation, or acceptance of a view after consideration—that a mendicant can rely on to declare their enlightenment. That is: ‘I understand: “Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.””
- 2.1 And what is that method? Take a mendicant who sees a sight with the eye. When they have greed, hate, and delusion in them, they understand ‘I have greed, hate, and delusion in me.’ When they

don't have greed, hate, and delusion in them, they understand 'I don't have greed, hate, and delusion in me.' Since this is so, are these things understood by faith, endorsement, oral tradition, reasoned contemplation, or acceptance of a view after consideration?"

"No, sir." 2.5

"Aren't they understood by seeing them with wisdom?" 2.6

"Yes, sir." 2.7

"This is a method—apart from faith, endorsement, oral tradition, reasoned contemplation, or acceptance of a view after consideration—that a mendicant can rely on to declare their enlightenment. That is: 'I understand: "Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence."' 2.8

Furthermore, a mendicant hears a sound ... smells an odor ... 3.1  
tastes a flavor ... feels a touch ... knows an idea with the mind. When they have greed, hate, and delusion in them, they understand 'I have greed, hate, and delusion in me.' When they don't have greed, hate, and delusion in them, they understand 'I don't have greed, hate, and delusion in me.' Since this is so, are these things understood by faith, endorsement, oral tradition, reasoned contemplation, or acceptance of a view after consideration?"

"No, sir." 4.4

"Aren't they understood by seeing them with wisdom?" 4.5

"Yes, sir." 4.6

"This too is a method—apart from faith, endorsement, oral tradition, reasoned contemplation, or acceptance of a view after consideration—that a mendicant can rely on to declare their enlightenment. That is: 'I understand: "Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence."' 4.7

SN 35.154

## Endowed With Faculties

*Indriyasampannasutta*

- 1.1 Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha ... and asked him, “Sir, they speak of someone who is ‘accomplished regarding the faculties.’ How is someone accomplished regarding the faculties defined?”
- 2.1 “Mendicant, if someone meditates observing rise and fall in the eye faculty, they grow disillusioned with the eye faculty.
- 2.2 If they meditate observing rise and fall in the ear faculty ... nose faculty ... tongue faculty ... body faculty ... mind faculty, they grow disillusioned with the mind faculty.
- 2.4 Being disillusioned, desire fades away. ... When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.
- 2.5 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’
- 2.6 This is how someone who is accomplished regarding the faculties is defined.”

SN 35.155

## A Dhamma Speaker

*Dhammakathikapucchassutta*

- 1.1 Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha ... and asked him, “Sir, they speak of a ‘Dhamma speaker’. How is a Dhamma speaker defined?”
- 2.1 “If a mendicant teaches Dhamma for disillusionment, dispassion, and cessation regarding the eye, they’re qualified to be called a ‘mendicant who speaks on Dhamma.’

If they practice for disillusionment, dispassion, and cessation 2.2  
regarding the eye, they're qualified to be called a 'mendicant who  
practices in line with the teaching'.

If they're freed by not grasping by disillusionment, dispassion, 2.3  
and cessation regarding the eye, they're qualified to be called a  
'mendicant who has attained extinguishment in this very life'.

If a mendicant teaches Dhamma for disillusionment with the 2.4  
ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, for its fading away and  
cessation, they're qualified to be called a 'mendicant who speaks  
on Dhamma'.

If they practice for disillusionment, dispassion, and cessation 2.6  
regarding the mind, they're qualified to be called a 'mendicant who  
practices in line with the teaching'.

If they're freed by not grasping by disillusionment, dispassion, 2.7  
and cessation regarding the mind, they're qualified to be called a  
'mendicant who has attained extinguishment in this very life.'"

*THE FOURTH FIFTY*



# The Chapter on the End of Relishing

SN 35.156

## The Interior and the End of Relishing

*Ajjhattanandikkhayasutta*

“Mendicants, the eye really is impermanent. A mendicant sees that 1.1  
it is impermanent: that’s their right view. Seeing rightly, they grow  
disillusioned. When relishing ends, greed ends. When greed ends,  
relishing ends. When relishing and greed end, the mind is said to  
be well freed.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind really is imper- 1.6  
manent. A mendicant sees that it is impermanent: that’s their right  
view. Seeing rightly, they grow disillusioned. When relishing ends,  
greed ends. When greed ends, relishing ends. When relishing and  
greed end, the mind is said to be well freed.”

SN 35.157

## The Exterior and the End of Relishing

*Bāhīranandikkhayasutta*

“Mendicants, sights really are impermanent. A mendicant sees that 1.1  
they are impermanent: that’s their right view. Seeing rightly, they  
grow disillusioned. When relishing ends, greed ends. When greed

ends, relishing ends. When relishing and greed end, the mind is said to be well freed.

- 1.6 Sounds ... Smells ... Tastes ... Touches ... Ideas really are impermanent. A mendicant sees that they are impermanent: that's their right view. Seeing rightly, they grow disillusioned. When relishing ends, greed ends. When greed ends, relishing ends. When relishing and greed end, the mind is said to be well freed."

SN 35.158

## Focus, the Interior, and the End of Relishing

*Ajjhattaaniccanandikkhayasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, rationally apply the mind to the eye. Truly see the impermanence of the eye. When a mendicant does this, they grow disillusioned with the eye. When relishing ends, greed ends. When greed ends, relishing ends. When relishing and greed end, the mind is said to be well freed.
- 1.6 Rationally apply the mind to the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind. Truly see the impermanence of the mind. When a mendicant does this, they grow disillusioned with the mind. When relishing ends, greed ends. When greed ends, relishing ends. When relishing and greed end, the mind is said to be well freed."

SN 35.159

## Focus, the Exterior, and the End of Relishing

*Bāhiraanicanandikkhayasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, rationally apply the mind to sights. Truly see the impermanence of sights. When a mendicant does this, they grow disillusioned with sights. When relishing ends, greed ends. When greed ends, relishing ends. When relishing and greed end, the mind is said to be well freed.

Rationally apply the mind to sounds ... smells ... tastes ... 1.6  
 touches ... ideas. Truly see the impermanence of ideas. When a  
 mendicant does this, they grow disillusioned with ideas. When  
 relishing ends, greed ends. When greed ends, relishing ends. When  
 relishing and greed end, the mind is said to be well freed."

SN 35.160

## On Immersion at Jīvaka's Mango Grove

*Jivakambavanasamādhisutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha in Jīvaka's 1.1  
 Mango Grove. There the Buddha addressed the mendicants:

"Mendicants, develop immersion. For a mendicant with immer- 1.4  
 sion, things become truly clear. And what becomes truly clear?

It becomes truly clear that the eye, sights, eye consciousness, 1.7  
 and eye contact are impermanent. And it also becomes truly clear  
 that the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned  
 by eye contact is impermanent.

It becomes truly clear that the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body 1.8  
 ... mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact are imper-  
 manent. And it also becomes truly clear that the painful, pleasant,  
 or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is imper-  
 manent.

Mendicants, develop immersion. For a mendicant with immer- 1.11  
 sion, things become truly clear."

SN 35.161

## On Retreat at Jīvaka's Mango Grove

*Jivakambavanapaṭisallānasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha in Jīvaka's 1.1  
 Mango Grove. There the Buddha addressed the mendicants:

- 1.3 “Mendicants, meditate in retreat. For a mendicant who meditates in retreat, things become truly clear. And what becomes truly clear?
- 1.6 It becomes truly clear that the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are impermanent. And it also becomes truly clear that the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is impermanent. ...
- 1.7 It becomes truly clear that the mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact are impermanent. And it also becomes truly clear that the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is impermanent.
- 1.11 Mendicants, meditate in retreat. For a mendicant who meditates in retreat, things become truly clear.”

SN 35.162

## With Koṭṭhita on Impermanence

*Koṭṭhikaaniccasutta*

- 1.1 Then Venerable Mahākoṭṭhita went up to the Buddha ... and asked him, “Sir, may the Buddha please teach me Dhamma in brief. When I’ve heard it, I’ll live alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute.”
- 2.1 “Koṭṭhita, you should give up desire for what is impermanent. And what is impermanent? The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are impermanent: you should give up desire for them. The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also impermanent: you should give up desire for it.
- 2.8 The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... The mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact are impermanent: you should give up desire for them. The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also impermanent: you should give up desire for it.
- 2.18 Koṭṭhita, you should give up desire for what is impermanent.”

SN 35.163

## With Koṭṭhita on Suffering

*Koṭṭhikadukkhasutta*

Then Venerable Mahākoṭṭhita ... said to the Buddha: 1.1

“Sir, may the Buddha please teach me Dhamma in brief. When I’ve heard it, I’ll live alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute.” 1.2

“Koṭṭhita, you should give up desire for what is suffering. And what is suffering? 1.3

The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are suffering: you should give up desire for them. The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also suffering; you should give up desire for it. 1.5

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... The mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact are suffering: you should give up desire for them. The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also suffering: you should give up desire for it. 1.10

Koṭṭhita, you should give up desire for what is suffering.” 1.16

SN 35.164

## With Koṭṭhita on Not-Self

*Koṭṭhikaanattasutta*

“Koṭṭhita, you should give up desire for what is not-self. And what is not-self? 1.3

The eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are not-self: you should give up desire for them. The pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also not-self: You should give up desire for it. 1.5

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... The mind, ideas, mind consciousness, and mind contact ... The pleasant, painful, or neu- 1.10

tral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact is also not-self:  
you should give up desire for it.

- 1.16 Koṭṭhita, you should give up desire for what is not-self.”

SN 35.165

## Giving Up Wrong View

*Micchādiṭṭhipahānasutta*

- 1.1 Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha ... and said to him:  
1.3 “Sir, how does one know and see so that wrong view is given up?”  
2.1 “Mendicant, knowing and seeing the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact as impermanent, wrong view is given up.  
...  
2.5 And also knowing and seeing the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact as impermanent, wrong view is given up.  
2.6 This is how to know and see so that wrong view is given up.”

SN 35.166

## Giving Up Substantialist View

*Sakkāyadiṭṭhipahānasutta*

- 1.1 Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha ... and said to him:  
1.3 “Sir, how does one know and see so that substantialist view is given up?”  
1.4 “Mendicant, knowing and seeing the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact as suffering, substantialist view is given up.  
...  
1.8 And also knowing and seeing the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact as suffering, substantialist view is given up.

This is how to know and see so that substantialist view is given up.” 1.9

SN 35.167

## Giving Up View of Self

*Attānudiṭṭhipahānasutta*

Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha ... and said to him: 1.1

“Sir, how does one know and see so that view of self is given up?” 1.3

“Mendicant, knowing and seeing the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact as not-self, view of self is given up. ... 1.4

And also knowing and seeing the pleasant, painful, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact as not-self, view of self is given up.” 1.10

# The Chapter on Sixty Abbreviated Texts

SN 35.168

## Desire for the Impermanent Interior

*Ajjhattaaniccachandasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, you should give up desire for what is impermanent.  
And what is impermanent?
- 1.3 The eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are impermanent:  
you should give up desire for them. You should give up desire for  
what is impermanent.”

SN 35.169

## Greed for the Impermanent Interior

*Ajjhattaaniccarāgasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, you should give up greed for what is impermanent.  
And what is impermanent?
- 1.3 The eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are impermanent ...”



SN 35.170

## Desire and Greed for the Impermanent Interior

*Ajjhattaaniccachandarāgasutta*

“Mendicants, you should give up desire and greed for what is im- 1.1  
permanent. And what is impermanent?”

The eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are impermanent ...” 1.3

SN 35.171–173

## Desire, Etc. for the Suffering Interior

*Dukkachandādisutta*

“Mendicants, you should give up desire ... greed ... desire and 1.1  
greed for what is suffering. And what is suffering?”

The eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are suffering ...” 1.3

SN 35.174–176

## Desire, Etc. for the Not-Self Interior

*Anattachandādisutta*

“Mendicants, you should give up desire ... greed ... desire and 1.1  
greed for what is not-self. And what is not-self?”

The eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are not-self ...” 1.3

SN 35.177–179

## Desire, Etc. for the Impermanent Exterior

*Bāhirāniccachandādisutta*

“Mendicants, you should give up desire ... greed ... desire and 1.1  
greed for what is impermanent. And what is impermanent?”

Sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are imper- 1.3  
manent ...”

SN 35.180–182

## Desire, Etc. for the Suffering Exterior

*Bāhiradukkhachandādisutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, you should give up desire ... greed ... desire and greed for what is suffering. And what is suffering?  
1.3 Sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are suffering ...”

SN 35.183–185

## Desire, Etc. for the Not-Self Exterior

*Bāhirānattachandādisutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, you should give up desire ... greed ... desire and greed for what is not-self. And what is not-self?  
1.3 Sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are not-self ...”

SN 35.186

## The Interior Was Impermanent in the Past

*Ajjhattātītānīccasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, in the past the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind were impermanent.  
1.2 Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind. Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed. When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.  
1.4 They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.’”

SN 35.187

## The Interior Will Be Impermanent in the Future

*Ajjhattānāgatāniccasutta*

“Mendicants, in the future the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and 1.1  
mind will be impermanent ...”

SN 35.188

## The Interior Is Impermanent in the Present

*Ajjhattapaccuppannāniccasutta*

“Mendicants, in the present the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and 1.1  
mind are impermanent ...”

SN 35.189–191

## The Interior as Suffering in the Three Times

*Ajjhattātītādidukkhassutta*

“Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present the eye, ear, nose, 1.1  
tongue, body, and mind are suffering ...”

SN 35.192–194

## The Interior as Not-Self in the Three Times

*Ajjhattātītāḍianattasutta*

“Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present the eye, ear, nose, 1.1  
tongue, body, and mind are not-self ...”

SN 35.195–197

## The Exterior as Impermanent in the Three Times

*Bāhirātītādiāniccasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are impermanent ...”

SN 35.198–200

## The Exterior as Suffering in the Three Times

*Bāhirātītādidukkkhasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are suffering ...”

SN 35.201–203

## The Exterior as Not-Self in the Three Times

*Bāhirātītādiānattasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are not-self ...”

SN 35.204

## The Interior and What’s Impermanent in the Past

*Ajjhattātītayadaniccasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, in the past the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind were impermanent. What’s impermanent is suffering. What’s suffering is not-self. And what’s not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’ ...”

SN 35.205

## The Interior and What's Impermanent in the Future

*Ajjhattānāgatayadanīccasutta*

“Mendicants, in the future the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and 1.1  
mind will be impermanent. What's impermanent is suffering ...”

SN 35.206

## The Interior and What's Impermanent in the Present

*Ajjhattapaccuppannayadanīccasutta*

“Mendicants, in the present the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and 1.1  
mind are impermanent. What's impermanent is suffering. ...”

SN 35.207–209

## The Interior and What's Suffering in the Three Times

*Ajjhattātītādiyaṃdukkhasutta*

“Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present the eye, ear, nose, 1.1  
tongue, body, and mind are suffering. What's suffering is not-self  
...”

SN 35.210–212

## The Interior and What's Not-Self in the Three Times

*Ajjhattātītādiyadanattasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are not-self. And what's not-self should be truly seen with right understanding like this: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’ ...”

SN 35.213–215

## The Exterior and What's Impermanent in the Three Times

*Bāhirātītādiyadaniccasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are impermanent. What's impermanent is suffering ...”

SN 35.216–218

## The Exterior and What's Suffering in the Three Times

*Bāhirātītādiyamdukkhasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are suffering. What's suffering is not-self ...”

SN 35.219–221

## The Exterior and What's Not-Self in the Three Times

*Bāhirātītādiyanattasutta*

“Mendicants, in the past ... future ... present sights, sounds, smells, 1.1  
tastes, touches, and ideas are not-self. And what's not-self should  
be truly seen with right understanding like this: ‘This is not mine,  
I am not this, this is not my self.’ ...”

SN 35.222

## The Interior as Impermanent

*Ajjhattāyatanaanicasutta*

“Mendicants, the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are imper- 1.1  
manent.

Seeing this ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any 1.2  
state of existence.’”

SN 35.223

## The Interior as Suffering

*Ajjhattāyanadukkhassutta*

“Mendicants, the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are suffer- 1.1  
ing.

Seeing this ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any 1.2  
state of existence.’”

SN 35.224

## The Interior as Not-Self

*Ajjhattāyatānānattasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, the eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, and mind are not-self.
- 1.2 Seeing this ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any state of existence.’”

SN 35.225

## The Exterior as Impermanent

*Bāhirāyatānānīccasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are impermanent.
- 1.2 Seeing this ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any state of existence.’”

SN 35.226

## The Exterior as Suffering

*Bāhirāyatanadukkhasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are suffering.
- 1.2 Seeing this ... They understand: ‘... there is no return to any state of existence.’”

SN 35.227

## The Exterior as Not-Self

*Bāhirāyatānānattasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas are not-self.



Seeing this ... They understand: '... there is no return to any 1.2  
state of existence.'"

# The Chapter on the Ocean

SN 35.228

## The Ocean (1st)

*Paṭhamasamuddasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, an unlearned ordinary person speaks of the ocean. But that’s not the ocean in the training of the Noble One. That’s just a large body of water, a large sea of water. For a person, the eye is an ocean, and its currents are made of sights.
- 2.1     Someone who can withstand those currents is said to have crossed over the ocean of the eye, with its waves and whirlpools, its saltwater crocodiles and monsters. Crossed over, the brahmin stands on the far shore.
- 2.3     For a person, the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is an ocean, and its currents are made of ideas. Someone who can withstand those currents is said to have crossed over the ocean of the mind, with its waves and whirlpools, its saltwater crocodiles and monsters. Crossed over, the brahmin stands on the far shore.”
- 2.11    That is what the Buddha said. Then the Holy One, the Teacher, went on to say:
- 3.1     “A knowledge master who’s crossed  
          the ocean so hard to cross,  
          with its saltwater crocodiles and monsters,  
          its waves, whirlpools, and dangers;

they've completed the spiritual journey,  
and gone to the end of the world,  
they're called 'one who has gone beyond.'"

SN 35.229

## The Ocean (2nd)

*Dutiyasamuddasutta*

"Mendicants, an unlearned ordinary person speaks of the ocean. 1.1  
But that's not the ocean in the training of the Noble One. That's  
just a large body of water, a large sea of water.

There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, 1.4  
agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. This is called the ocean  
in the training of the Noble One. And it's here that this world—  
with its gods, Māras and Brahmās, this population with its ascetics  
and brahmins, gods and humans—is for the most part sunk. It's  
become tangled like string, knotted like a ball of thread, and matted  
like rushes and reeds, and it doesn't escape the places of loss, the  
bad places, the underworld, transmigration.

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known 2.1  
by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual,  
and arousing. This is called the ocean in the training of the No-  
ble One. And it's here that this world—with its gods, Māras and  
Brahmās, this population with its ascetics and brahmins, gods and  
humans—is for the most part sunk. It's become tangled like string,  
knotted like a ball of thread, and matted like rushes and reeds, and  
it doesn't escape the places of loss, the bad places, the underworld,  
transmigration.

Those in whom greed, hate, and ignorance 3.1  
have faded away;  
have crossed the ocean so hard to cross,  
with its saltwater crocodiles and monsters,  
its waves and dangers.

- 4.1 They've slipped their chains, given up death, and have  
no attachments.  
They've given up suffering,  
so there are no more future lives.  
They've come to an end, and cannot be measured;  
and they've confounded the King of Death, I say."

SN 35.230

## The Simile of the Fisherman

*Bāḷisikopamasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, suppose a fisherman was to cast a baited hook into a deep lake. Seeing the bait, a fish would swallow it. And so the fish that swallowed the hook would meet with tragedy and disaster, and the fisherman can do what he wants with it.
- 2.1 In the same way, there are these six hooks in the world that mean tragedy and slaughter for living creatures. What six?
- 2.3 There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, they're called a mendicant who has swallowed Māra's hook. They've met with tragedy and disaster, and the Wicked One can do with them what he wants.
- 2.6 There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant approves, welcomes, and keeps clinging to them, they're called a mendicant who has swallowed Māra's hook. They've met with tragedy and disaster, and the Wicked One can do with them what he wants.
- 4.1 There are sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep clinging to them, they're called a mendicant who hasn't swallowed Māra's hook. They've broken the hook, destroyed it. They haven't met with tragedy and disaster, and the Wicked One cannot do with them what he wants.

There are sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known 5.1  
 by the mind that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual,  
 and arousing. If a mendicant doesn't approve, welcome, and keep  
 clinging to them, they're called a mendicant who hasn't swallowed  
 Māra's hook. They've broken the hook, destroyed it. They haven't  
 met with tragedy and disaster, and the Wicked One cannot do with  
 them what he wants."

SN 35.231

## The Simile of the Latex-Producing Tree

*Khīrarukkhopamasutta*

"Mendicants, take any monk or nun who, when it comes to sights 1.1  
 known by the eye, still has greed, hate, and delusion, and has not  
 given them up. If even trivial sights come into their range of vision  
 they overcome their mind, let alone those that are compelling.  
 Why is that? Because they still have greed, hate, and delusion, and  
 have not given them up.

When it comes to sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... 2.1  
 ideas known by the mind, they still have greed, hate, and delusion,  
 and have not given them up. If even trivial ideas come into the  
 range of the mind they overcome their mind, let alone those that  
 are compelling. Why is that? Because they still have greed, hate,  
 and delusion, and have not given them up.

Suppose there was a latex-producing tree—such as a peepal, 4.1  
 a banyan, a wavy leaf fig, or a cluster fig—that's a tender young  
 sapling. If a man were to chop it here and there with a sharp axe,  
 would latex come out?"

"Yes, sir. 4.3

Why is that? Because it still has latex." 4.4

"In the same way, take any monk or nun who, when it comes 5.1  
 to sights known by the eye, still has greed, hate, and delusion,  
 and has not given them up. If even trivial sights come into their  
 range of vision they overcome their mind, let alone those that are

compelling. Why is that? Because they still have greed, hate, and delusion, and have not given them up.

6.1 When it comes to sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind, they still have greed, hate, and delusion, and have not given them up. If even trivial ideas come into the range of the mind they overcome their mind, let alone those that are compelling. Why is that? Because they still have greed, hate, and delusion, and have not given them up.

8.1 Take any monk or nun who, when it comes to sights known by the eye, has no greed, hate, and delusion left, and has given them up. If even compelling sights come into their range of vision they don't overcome their mind, let alone those that are trivial. Why is that? Because they have no greed, hate, and delusion left, and have given them up.

9.1 When it comes to sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind, they have no greed, hate, and delusion left, and have given them up. If even compelling ideas come into the range of the mind they don't overcome their mind, let alone those that are trivial. Why is that? Because they have no greed, hate, and delusion left, and have given them up.

9.4 Suppose there was a latex-producing tree—such as a peepal, a banyan, a wavy leaf fig, or a cluster fig—that's dried up, withered, and decrepit. If a man were to chop it here and there with a sharp axe, would latex come out?"

9.6 "No, sir. Why is that? Because it has no latex left."

10.1 "In the same way, take any monk or nun who, when it comes to sights known by the eye, has no greed, hate, and delusion left, and has given them up. If even compelling sights come into their range of vision they don't overcome their mind, let alone those that are trivial. Why is that? Because they have no greed, hate, and delusion left, and have given them up.

11.1 When it comes to sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind, they have no greed, hate, and delusion left, and have given them up. If even compelling ideas come into

the range of the mind they don't overcome their mind, let alone those that are trivial. Why is that? Because they have no greed, hate, and delusion left, and have given them up."

SN 35.232

## With Koṭṭhita

*Koṭṭhikasutta*

At one time Venerable Sāriputta and Venerable Mahākoṭṭhita were 1.1  
staying near Varanasi, in the deer park at Isipatana. Then in the late  
afternoon, Venerable Mahākoṭṭhita came out of retreat, went to  
Venerable Sāriputta, and exchanged greetings with him. When the  
greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one  
side and said to Sāriputta:

"Reverend Sāriputta, which is it? Is the eye the fetter of sights, 2.1  
or are sights the fetter of the eye? Is the ear ... nose ... tongue  
... body ... mind the fetter of ideas, or are ideas the fetter of the  
mind?"

"Reverend Koṭṭhita, the eye is not the fetter of sights, nor are 3.1  
sights the fetter of the eye. The fetter there is the desire and greed  
that arises from the pair of them. The ear ... nose ... tongue ...  
body ... mind is not the fetter of ideas, nor are ideas the fetter of  
the mind. The fetter there is the desire and greed that arises from  
the pair of them.

Suppose there was a black ox and a white ox yoked by a single 4.1  
harness or yoke. Would it be right to say that the black ox is the  
yoke of the white ox, or the white ox is the yoke of the black ox?"

"No, reverend. The black ox is not the yoke of the white ox, nor 4.4  
is the white ox the yoke of the black ox. The yoke there is the single  
harness or yoke that they're yoked by."

"In the same way, the eye is not the fetter of sights, nor are sights 5.1  
the fetter of the eye. The fetter there is the desire and greed that  
arises from the pair of them. The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body  
... mind is not the fetter of ideas, nor are ideas the fetter of the

mind. The fetter there is the desire and greed that arises from the pair of them.

6.1 If the eye were the fetter of sights, or if sights were the fetter of the eye, this living of the spiritual life for the complete ending of suffering would not be found. However, since this is not the case, but the fetter there is the desire and greed that arises from the pair of them, this living of the spiritual life for the complete ending of suffering is found.

7.1 If the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind were the fetter of ideas, or if ideas were the fetter of the mind, this living of the spiritual life for the complete ending of suffering would not be found. However, since this is not the case, but the fetter there is the desire and greed that arises from the pair of them, this living of the spiritual life for the complete ending of suffering is found.

9.1 This too is a way to understand how this is so.

10.1 The Buddha has an eye with which he sees a sight. But he has no desire and greed, for his mind is well freed. The Buddha has an ear ... nose ... tongue ... The Buddha has a body with which he senses touch. But he has no desire and greed, for his mind is well freed. The Buddha has a mind

10.22 with which he knows ideas. But he has no desire and greed, for his mind is well freed.

11.1 This too is a way to understand how the eye is not the fetter of sights, nor are sights the fetter of the eye. The fetter there is the desire and greed that arises from the pair of them. The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is not the fetter of ideas, nor are ideas the fetter of the mind. The fetter there is the desire and greed that arises from the pair of them.”



SN 35.233

## With Kāmabhū

*Kāmabhūsutta*

At one time the venerables Ānanda and Kāmabhū were staying 1.1  
near Kosambī, in Ghosita's Monastery.

Then in the late afternoon, Venerable Kāmabhū came out of 1.2  
retreat, went to Venerable Ānanda, and exchanged greetings with  
him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat  
down to one side and said to Ānanda:

“Reverend Ānanda, which is it? Is the eye the fetter of sights, 2.1  
or are sights the fetter of the eye? Is the ear ... nose ... tongue  
... body ... mind the fetter of ideas, or are ideas the fetter of the  
mind?”

“Reverend Kāmabhū, the eye is not the fetter of sights, nor are 3.1  
sights the fetter of the eye. The fetter there is the desire and greed  
that arises from the pair of them. The ear ... nose ... tongue ...  
body ... mind is not the fetter of ideas, nor are ideas the fetter of  
the mind. The fetter there is the desire and greed that arises from  
the pair of them.

Suppose there was a black ox and a white ox yoked by a single 4.1  
harness or yoke. Would it be right to say that the black ox is the  
yoke of the white ox, or the white ox is the yoke of the black ox?”

“No, reverend. The black ox is not the yoke of the white ox, nor 4.4  
is the white ox the yoke of the black ox. The yoke there is the single  
harness or yoke that they're yoked by.”

“In the same way, the eye is not the fetter of sights, nor are sights 4.7  
the fetter of the eye. The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind  
is not the fetter of ideas, nor are ideas the fetter of the mind. The  
fetter there is the desire and greed that arises from the pair of them.”

SN 35.234

## With Udāyī

*Udāyīsutta*

- 1.1 At one time the venerables Ānanda and Udāyī were staying near Kosambī, in Ghosita's Monastery.
- 1.2 Then in the late afternoon, Venerable Udāyī came out of retreat, went to Venerable Ānanda, and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side and said to Ānanda:
- 2.1 "Reverend Ānanda, the Buddha has explained, opened, and illuminated in many ways how this body is not-self. Is it possible to explain consciousness in the same way? To teach, assert, establish, clarify, analyze, and reveal how consciousness is not-self?"
- 3.1 "It is possible, Reverend Udāyī.
- 4.1 Does eye consciousness arise dependent on the eye and sights?"
- 4.2 "Yes, reverend."
- 4.3 "If the cause and reason that gives rise to eye consciousness were to totally and utterly cease without anything left over, would eye consciousness still be found?"
- 4.4 "No, reverend."
- 4.5 "In this way, too, it can be understood how consciousness is not-self.
- 5.1 Does ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind consciousness arise dependent on the mind and ideas?"
- 6.2 "Yes, reverend."
- 6.3 "If the cause and reason that gives rise to mind consciousness were to totally and utterly cease without anything left over, would mind consciousness still be found?"
- 6.4 "No, reverend."
- 6.5 "In this way, too, it can be understood how consciousness is not-self.
- 7.1 Suppose there was a person in need of heartwood. Wandering in search of heartwood, they'd take a sharp axe and enter a forest.

There they'd see a big banana tree, straight and young and grown free of defects. They'd cut it down at the base, cut off the root, cut off the top, and unroll the coiled sheaths. But they wouldn't even find sapwood, much less heartwood.

In the same way, a mendicant sees these six fields of contact 7.2 as neither self nor belonging to self. So seeing, they don't grasp anything in the world. Not grasping, they're not anxious. Not being anxious, they personally become extinguished.

They understand: 'Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has 7.5 been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no return to any state of existence.'

SN 35.235

## The Exposition on Burning

*Ādittapariyāyasutta*

"Mendicants, I will teach you an exposition of the teaching on burn- 1.1 ing. Listen ...

And what is the exposition of the teaching on burning? 1.3

You'd be better off mutilating your eye faculty with a red-hot 1.4 iron nail, burning, blazing and glowing, than getting caught up in the features by way of the details in sights known by the eye. For if you die at a time when your consciousness is still tied to gratification in the features or details, it's possible you'll go to one of two destinations: hell or the animal realm. I speak having seen this drawback.

You'd be better off mutilating your ear faculty with a sharp iron 2.1 spike ...

You'd be better off mutilating your nose faculty with a sharp nail 3.1 cutter ...

You'd be better off mutilating your tongue faculty with a sharp 4.1 razor ...

You'd be better off mutilating your body faculty with a sharp 5.1 spear, burning, blazing and glowing, than getting caught up in

the features by way of the details in touches known by the body. For if you die at a time when your consciousness is still tied to gratification in the features or details, it's possible you'll go to one of two destinations: hell or the animal realm. I speak having seen this drawback.

- 6.1 You'd be better off sleeping. For I say that sleep is useless, fruitless, and unconsciousness for the living. But while you're asleep you won't fall under the sway of such thoughts that would make you create a schism in the Saṅgha. I speak having seen this drawback.
- 7.1 A learned noble disciple reflects on this: 'Forget mutilating the eye faculty with a red-hot iron nail, burning, blazing and glowing! I'd better focus on the fact that the eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact are impermanent. And the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by eye contact is also impermanent.
- 8.1 Forget mutilating the ear faculty with a sharp iron spike, burning, blazing and glowing! I'd better focus on the fact that the ear, sounds, ear consciousness, and ear contact are impermanent. And the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by ear contact is also impermanent.
- 9.1 Forget mutilating the nose faculty with a sharp nail cutter, burning, blazing and glowing! I'd better focus on the fact that the nose, smells, nose consciousness, and nose contact are impermanent. And the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by nose contact is also impermanent.
- 10.1 Forget mutilating the tongue faculty with a sharp razor, burning, blazing and glowing! I'd better focus on the fact that the tongue, tastes, tongue consciousness, and tongue contact are impermanent. And the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by tongue contact is also impermanent.
- 11.1 Forget mutilating the body faculty with a sharp spear, burning, blazing and glowing! I'd better focus on the fact that the body, touches, body consciousness, and body contact are impermanent.

And the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by body contact is also impermanent.

Forget sleeping! I'd better focus on the fact that the mind, ideas, 12.1  
mind consciousness, and mind contact are impermanent. And the  
painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises conditioned by mind  
contact is also impermanent.'

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with the 13.1  
eye, sights, eye consciousness, and eye contact. And they become  
disillusioned with the painful, pleasant, or neutral feeling that arises  
conditioned by eye contact. They grow disillusioned with the ear  
... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind ... painful, pleasant, or neutral  
feeling that arises conditioned by mind contact.

Being disillusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away 13.3  
they're freed. When they're freed, they know they're freed.

They understand: 'Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has 13.4  
been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no  
return to any state of existence.'

This is the exposition of the teaching on burning." 13.5

SN 35.236

## The Simile of Hands and Feet (1st)

*Paṭhamahatthapāḍopamasutta*

"Mendicants, when there are hands, picking up and putting down 1.1  
are found. When there are feet, coming and going are found. When  
there are joints, contracting and extending are found. When there's  
a belly, hunger and thirst are found.

In the same way, when there's an eye, pleasure and pain arise 1.5  
internally conditioned by eye contact. When there's an ear ... nose  
... tongue ... body ... mind, pleasure and pain arise internally  
conditioned by mind contact.

When there are no hands, picking up and putting down aren't 2.1  
found. When there are no feet, coming and going aren't found.

When there are no joints, contracting and extending aren't found.  
When there's no belly, hunger and thirst aren't found.

- 2.5 In the same way, when there's no eye, pleasure and pain don't arise internally conditioned by eye contact. When there's no ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, pleasure and pain don't arise internally conditioned by mind contact."

SN 35.237

## The Simile of Hands and Feet (2nd)

*Dutiyahatthapādopamasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, when there are hands, there's picking up and putting down. When there are feet, there's coming and going. When there are joints, there's contracting and extending. When there's a belly, there's hunger and thirst.
- 1.5 In the same way, when there's an eye, pleasure and pain arise internally conditioned by eye contact. When there's an ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, pleasure and pain arise internally conditioned by mind contact.
- 2.1 When there are no hands, there's no picking up and putting down. When there are no feet, there's no coming and going. When there are no joints, there's no contracting and extending. When there's no belly, there's no hunger and thirst.
- 2.5 In the same way, when there's no eye, pleasure and pain don't arise internally conditioned by eye contact. When there's no ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, pleasure and pain don't arise internally conditioned by mind contact."

# The Chapter on the Simile of the Vipers

SN 35.238

## The Simile of the Vipers

*Āsivisopamasutta*

“Mendicants, suppose there were four lethal poisonous vipers. Then 1.1  
a person would come along who wants to live and doesn’t want to  
die, who wants to be happy and recoils from pain.

They’d say to him, ‘Mister, here are four lethal poisonous vipers. 1.3  
They must be periodically picked up, washed, fed, and put to sleep.  
But when one or other of these four poisonous vipers gets angry  
with you, you’ll meet with death or deadly pain. So then, mister,  
do what has to be done.’

Then that man, terrified of those four poisonous vipers, would 2.1  
flee this way or that.

They’d say to him, ‘Mister, there are five deadly enemies chasing 2.2  
you, thinking: “When we catch sight of him, we’ll murder him  
right there!” So then, mister, do what has to be done.’

Then that man, terrified of those four poisonous vipers and those 3.1  
five deadly enemies, would flee this way or that.

They’d say to him, ‘Mister, there’s a sixth hidden killer chasing 3.2  
you with a drawn sword, thinking: “When I catch sight of him, I’ll  
chop off his head right there!” So then, mister, do what has to be  
done.’

- 4.1 Then that man, terrified of those four poisonous vipers and those five deadly enemies and the hidden killer, would flee this way or that.
- 4.2 He'd see an empty village. But whatever house he enters is vacant, deserted, and empty. And whatever vessel he touches is vacant, hollow, and empty.
- 4.5 They'd say to him, 'Mister, there are bandits who raid villages, and they're striking now. So then, mister, do what has to be done.'
- 5.1 Then that man, terrified of those four poisonous vipers and those five deadly enemies and the hidden killer and the bandits, would flee this way or that.
- 5.2 He'd see a large deluge, whose near shore is dubious and perilous, while the far shore is a sanctuary free of peril. But there's no ferryboat or bridge for crossing over.
- 5.4 Then that man thought, 'Why don't I gather grass, sticks, branches, and leaves and make a raft? Riding on the raft, and paddling with my hands and feet, I can safely reach the far shore.'
- 6.1 And so that man did exactly that. Having crossed over and gone beyond, the brahmin stands on the far shore.
- 7.1 I've made up this simile to make a point. And this is the point.
- 7.3 'Four lethal poisonous vipers' is a term for the four primary elements: the elements of earth, water, fire, and air.
- 8.1 'Five deadly enemies' is a term for the five grasping aggregates, that is: form, feeling, perception, choices, and consciousness.
- 9.1 'The sixth hidden killer with a drawn sword' is a term for relishing and greed.
- 10.1 'Empty village' is a term for the six interior sense fields. If an astute, competent, clever person investigates this in relation to the eye, it appears vacant, hollow, and empty. If an astute, competent, clever person investigates this in relation to the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind, it appears vacant, hollow, and empty.
- 11.1 'Bandits who raid villages' is a term for the six exterior sense fields. The eye is struck by both agreeable and disagreeable sights.



The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is struck by both agreeable and disagreeable ideas.

‘Large deluge’ is a term for the four floods: the floods of sensual pleasures, desire to be reborn, views, and ignorance. 12.1

‘The near shore that’s dubious and perilous’ is a term for substantial reality. 13.1

‘The far shore, a sanctuary free of peril’ is a term for extinguishment. 14.1

‘The raft’ is a term for the noble eightfold path, that is: right view, right thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort, right mindfulness, and right immersion. 15.1

‘Paddling with hands and feet’ is a term for rousing energy. 16.1

‘Crossed over, gone beyond, the brahmin stands on the shore’ is a term for a perfected one.” 17.1

SN 35.239

## The Simile of the Chariot

*Rathopamasutta*

“Mendicants, when a mendicant has three qualities they’re full of joy and happiness in the present life, and they have laid the groundwork for ending the defilements. What three? 1.1

They guard the sense doors, eat in moderation, and are committed to wakefulness. 1.3

And how does a mendicant guard the sense doors? 2.1

When a mendicant sees a sight with their eyes, they don’t get caught up in the features and details. If the faculty of sight were left unrestrained, bad unskillful qualities of covetousness and displeasure would become overwhelming. For this reason, they practice restraint, protecting the faculty of sight, and achieving its restraint. 2.2

When they hear a sound with their ears ... 2.4

When they smell an odor with their nose ... 2.5

When they taste a flavor with their tongue ... 2.6

When they feel a touch with their body ... 2.7

2.8 When they know an idea with their mind, they don't get caught up in the features and details. If the faculty of mind were left unrestrained, bad unskillful qualities of covetousness and displeasure would become overwhelming. For this reason, they practice restraint, protecting the faculty of mind, and achieving its restraint.

2.10 Suppose a chariot stood harnessed to thoroughbreds at a level crossroads, with a goad ready. Then a deft horse trainer, a master charioteer, might mount the chariot, taking the reins in his right hand and goad in the left. He'd drive out and back wherever he wishes, whenever he wishes.

2.11 In the same way, a mendicant trains to protect, control, tame, and pacify these six senses.

2.12 That's how a mendicant guards the sense doors.

3.1 And how does a mendicant eat in moderation?

3.2 It's when a mendicant reflects rationally on the food that they eat: 'Not for fun, indulgence, adornment, or decoration, but only to sustain this body, to avoid harm, and to support spiritual practice. In this way, I shall put an end to old discomfort and not give rise to new discomfort, and I will live blamelessly and at ease.'

3.4 It's like a person who puts ointment on a wound only so that it can heal; or who oils an axle only so that it can carry a load.

3.5 In the same way, a mendicant reflects rationally on the food that they eat: 'Not for fun, indulgence, adornment, or decoration, but only to sustain this body, to avoid harm, and to support spiritual practice. In this way, I shall put an end to old discomfort and not give rise to new discomfort, and I will live blamelessly and at ease.'

3.7 That's how a mendicant eats in moderation.

4.1 And how is a mendicant committed to wakefulness?

4.2 It's when a mendicant practices walking and sitting meditation by day, purifying their mind from obstacles. In the evening, they continue to practice walking and sitting meditation. In the middle of the night, they lie down in the lion's posture—on the right side, placing one foot on top of the other—mindful and aware, and focused on the time of getting up. In the last part of the night, they

get up and continue to practice walking and sitting meditation, purifying their mind from obstacles.

This is how a mendicant is committed to wakefulness. 4.6

When a mendicant has these three qualities they're full of joy 4.7  
and happiness in the present life, and they have laid the groundwork  
for ending the defilements."

SN 35.240

## The Simile of the Tortoise

*Kummopamasutta*

"Once upon a time, mendicants, a tortoise was grazing along the 1.1  
bank of a river in the afternoon. At the same time, a jackal was also  
hunting along the river bank. The tortoise saw the jackal off in the  
distance hunting, so it drew its limbs and neck inside its shell, and  
kept passive and silent.

But the jackal also saw the tortoise off in the distance grazing. 1.5  
So it went up to the tortoise and waited nearby, thinking, 'When  
that tortoise sticks one or other of its limbs or neck out from its  
shell, I'll grab it right there, rip it out, and eat it!'

But when that tortoise didn't stick one or other of its limbs or 1.8  
neck out from its shell, the jackal left disappointed, since it couldn't  
find a vulnerability.

In the same way, Māra the Wicked is always waiting nearby, 2.1  
thinking: 'Hopefully I can find a vulnerability in the eye, ear, nose,  
tongue, body, or mind.' That's why you should live with sense doors  
guarded.

When you see a sight with your eyes, don't get caught up in the 2.6  
features and details. If the faculty of sight were left unrestrained,  
bad unskillful qualities of covetousness and displeasure would be-  
come overwhelming. For this reason, practice restraint, protecting  
the faculty of sight, and achieving its restraint.

When you hear a sound with your ears ... 2.8

When you smell an odor with your nose ... 2.9

- 2.10 When you taste a flavor with your tongue ...
- 2.11 When you feel a touch with your body ...
- 2.12 When you know an idea with your mind, don't get caught up in the features and details. If the faculty of mind were left unrestrained, bad unskillful qualities of covetousness and displeasure would become overwhelming. For this reason, practice restraint, protecting the faculty of mind, and achieving its restraint.
- 2.14 When you live with your sense doors guarded, Māra will leave you disappointed, since he can't find a vulnerability, just like the jackal left the tortoise.
- 3.1 A mendicant should collect their thoughts as a tortoise draws its limbs into its shell. Independent, not disturbing others, quenched: they wouldn't blame anyone."

SN 35.241

## The Simile of the Tree Trunk (1st)

*Paṭhamadārukkhandhopamasutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Kosambī on the bank of the Ganges river.
- 1.2 Seeing a large tree trunk being carried along by the current, he addressed the mendicants, "Mendicants, do you see that large tree trunk being carried along by the current of the Ganges river?"
- 1.5 "Yes, sir."
- 1.6 "Mendicants, assume that that tree trunk doesn't collide with the near shore or the far shore, or sink in the middle, or get stranded on high ground. And assume that it doesn't get taken by humans or non-humans or caught up in a whirlpool, and that it doesn't rot away. In that case, that tree trunk will slant, slope, and incline towards the ocean. Why is that? Because the current of the Ganges river slants, slopes, and inclines towards the ocean.

In the same way, assume that you don't collide with the near shore or the far shore, or sink in the middle, or get stranded on high ground. And assume that you don't get taken by humans or non-humans or caught up in a whirlpool, and that you don't rot away. In that case, you will slant, slope, and incline towards extinguishment. Why is that? Because right view slants, slopes, and inclines towards extinguishment." 2.1

When he said this, one of the mendicants asked the Buddha: 2.6

"But sir, what's the near shore and what's the far shore? What's sinking in the middle? What's getting stranded on high ground? What's getting taken by humans or non-humans? What's getting caught up in a whirlpool? And what's rotting away?" 2.7

"The near shore', mendicant, is a term for the six interior sense fields. 3.1

'The far shore' is a term for the six exterior sense fields. 3.2

'Sinking in the middle' is a term for greed and relishing. 3.3

'Stranded on high ground' is a term for the conceit 'I am'. 3.4

And what's getting taken by humans? It's when someone mixes closely with laypeople, sharing their joys and sorrows—happy when they're happy and sad when they're sad—and getting involved in their business. That's called getting taken by humans. 4.1

And what's getting taken by non-humans? It's when someone leads the spiritual life wishing to be reborn in one of the orders of gods: 'By this precept or observance or fervent austerity or spiritual life, may I become one of the gods!' That's called getting taken by non-humans. 'Caught up in a whirlpool' is a term for the five kinds of sensual stimulation. 5.1

And what's rotting away? It's when some person is unethical, of bad qualities, filthy, with suspicious behavior, underhand, no true ascetic or spiritual practitioner—though claiming to be one—rotten inside, corrupt, and depraved. This is called 'rotting away.' 6.1

Now at that time Nanda the cowherd was sitting not far from the Buddha. Then he said to the Buddha: 7.1

- 7.3 “I won’t collide with the near shore or the far shore, or sink in the middle, or get stranded on high ground. And I won’t get taken by humans or non-humans or caught up in a whirlpool, and I won’t rot away. Sir, may I receive the going forth, the ordination in the Buddha’s presence?”
- 7.5 “Well then, Nanda, return the cows to their owners.”
- 7.6 “Sir, the cows will go back by themselves, since they love their calves.”
- 7.7 “Still, Nanda, you should return them to their owners.”
- 7.8 Then Nanda, after returning the cows to their owners, went up to the Buddha and said to him, “Sir, I have returned the cows to their owners. May I receive the going forth, the ordination in the Buddha’s presence?”
- 7.11 And the cowherd Nanda received the going forth, the ordination in the Buddha’s presence. Not long after his ordination, Venerable Nanda became one of the perfected.

SN 35.242

## The Simile of the Tree Trunk (2nd)

*Dutiyaḍārukkhaṇḍhōpamasutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Kimibilā on the bank of the Ganges river. Seeing a large tree trunk being carried along by the current, he addressed the mendicants: “Mendicants, do you see that large tree trunk being carried along by the current of the Ganges river?”
- 1.5 “Yes, sir,” they replied. ... When this was said, Venerable Kimbila said to the Buddha:
- 1.7 “But sir, what’s the near shore and what’s the far shore? What’s sinking in the middle? What’s getting stranded on high ground? What’s getting taken by humans or non-humans? What’s getting caught up in a whirlpool? And what’s rotting away?” ...

“And what, Kimbila, is rotting away? It’s when a mendicant has committed the kind of corrupt offense for which no resolution is possible. This is called ‘rotting away.’” 1.8

SN 35.243

## The Explanation on the Corrupt

*Avassutapariyāyasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying in the land of the Sakyans, near Kapilavatthu in the Banyan Tree Monastery. Now at that time a new town hall had recently been constructed for the Sakyans of Kapilavatthu. It had not yet been occupied by an ascetic or brahmin or any person at all. 1.1

Then the Sakyans of Kapilavatthu went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him, “Sir, a new town hall has recently been constructed for the Sakyans of Kapilavatthu. It has not yet been occupied by an ascetic or brahmin or any person at all. May the Buddha be the first to use it, and only then will the Sakyans of Kapilavatthu use it. That would be for the lasting welfare and happiness of the Sakyans of Kapilavatthu.” The Buddha consented with silence. 1.3

Knowing that the Buddha had consented, the Sakyans got up from their seat, bowed, and respectfully circled the Buddha, keeping him on their right. Then they went to the new town hall, where they spread carpets all over, prepared seats, set up a water jar, and placed an oil lamp. Then they went back to the Buddha and told him of their preparations, saying, “Please, sir, come at your convenience.” 2.1

Then the Buddha robed up and, taking his bowl and robe, went to the new town hall together with the Saṅgha of mendicants. Having washed his feet he entered the town hall and sat against the central column facing east. The Saṅgha of mendicants also washed their feet, entered the town hall, and sat against the west wall facing east, with the Buddha right in front of them. The Sakyans of 2.4

Kapilavatthu also washed their feet, entered the town hall, and sat against the east wall facing west, with the Buddha right in front of them. The Buddha spent much of the night educating, encouraging, firing up, and inspiring the Sakyans with a Dhamma talk. Then he dismissed them, saying, “The night is getting late, Gotamas. Please go at your convenience.”

2.10 “Yes, sir,” replied the Sakyans. They got up from their seat, bowed, and respectfully circled the Buddha, keeping him on their right, before leaving.

3.1 And then, soon after the Sakyans had left, the Buddha addressed Venerable Mahāmoggallāna, “Moggallāna, the Saṅgha of mendicants is rid of dullness and drowsiness. Give them some Dhamma talk as you feel inspired. My back is sore, I’ll stretch it.”

3.6 “Yes, sir,” Mahāmoggallāna replied. And then the Buddha spread out his outer robe folded in four and laid down in the lion’s posture—on the right side, placing one foot on top of the other—mindful and aware, and focused on the time of getting up.

3.8 There Venerable Mahāmoggallāna addressed the mendicants: “Reverends, mendicants!”

3.10 “Reverend,” they replied. Venerable Mahāmoggallāna said this:

3.12 “I will teach you the explanation of the corrupt and the uncorrupted. Listen and apply your mind well, I will speak.”

3.14 “Yes, reverend,” they replied. Venerable Mahāmoggallāna said this:

4.1 “And how is someone corrupt?

4.2 Take a mendicant who sees a sight with the eye. If it’s pleasant they hold on to it, but if it’s unpleasant they dislike it. They live with mindfulness of the body unestablished and their heart restricted. And they don’t truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

4.4 They hear a sound ... smell an odor ... taste a flavor ... feel a touch ... know an idea with the mind. If it’s pleasant they hold on to it, but if it’s unpleasant they dislike it. They live with mindfulness



of the body unestablished and a limited heart. And they don't truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

This is called a mendicant who is corrupt when it comes to sights 4.7  
known by the eye, sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas  
known by the mind.

When a mendicant lives like this, if Māra comes at them through 4.10  
the eye he finds a vulnerability and gets hold of them. If Māra  
comes at them through the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ...  
mind he finds a vulnerability and gets hold of them.

Suppose there was a house made of reeds or straw that was 5.1  
dried up, withered, and decrepit. If a person came to it with a  
burning grass torch from the east, west, north, south, below, above,  
or from anywhere, the fire would find a vulnerability, it would get  
a foothold.

In the same way, when a mendicant lives like this, if Māra comes 5.9  
at them through the eye he finds a vulnerability and gets hold of  
them. If Māra comes at them through the ear ... nose ... tongue  
... body ... mind he finds a vulnerability and gets hold of them.

When a mendicant lives like this, they're mastered by sights, 5.12  
sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas, they don't master these  
things.

This is called a mendicant who has been mastered by sights, 5.18  
sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas. They're mastered, not  
a master. Bad, unskillful qualities have mastered them, which are  
corrupting, leading to future lives, hurtful, and resulting in suffering  
and future rebirth, old age, and death.

That's how someone is corrupt. 5.19

And how is someone uncorrupted? 6.1

Take a mendicant who sees a sight with the eye. If it's pleasant 6.2  
they don't hold on to it, and if it's unpleasant they don't dislike it.  
They live with mindfulness of the body established and a limitless  
heart. And they truly understand the freedom of heart and free-

dom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

6.4 They hear a sound ... smell an odor ... taste a flavor ... feel a touch ... know an idea with the mind. If it's pleasant they don't hold on to it, and if it's unpleasant they don't dislike it. They live with mindfulness of the body established and a limitless heart. And they truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

6.7 This is called a mendicant who is uncorrupted when it comes to sights known by the eye, sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ... ideas known by the mind.

6.9 When a mendicant lives like this, if Māra comes at them through the eye he doesn't find a vulnerability or get hold of them. If Māra comes at them through the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind he doesn't find a vulnerability or get hold of them.

7.1 Suppose there was a bungalow or hall made of thick clay with its plaster still wet. If a person came to it with a burning grass torch from the east, west, north, south, below, above, or from anywhere, the fire wouldn't find a vulnerability, it would get no foothold.

7.9 In the same way, when a mendicant lives like this, if Māra comes at them through the eye he doesn't find a vulnerability or get hold of them. If Māra comes at them through the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind he doesn't find a vulnerability or get hold of them.

7.11 When a mendicant lives like this, they master sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas, they're not mastered by these things.

7.17 This is called a mendicant who has mastered sights, sounds, smells, tastes, touches, and ideas. They're a master, not mastered. Bad, unskillful qualities have been mastered by them, which are corrupting, leading to future lives, hurtful, and resulting in suffering and future rebirth, old age, and death.

7.18 That's how someone is uncorrupted."

Then the Buddha got up and said to Venerable Mahāmoggallāna: 8.1  
 “Good, good, Moggallāna! It’s good that you’ve taught this 8.2  
 explanation of the corrupt and the uncorrupted.”

This is what Venerable Mahāmoggallāna said, and the teacher ap- 9.1  
 proved. Satisfied, the mendicants approved what Mahāmoggallāna  
 said.

SN 35.244

## Entailing Suffering

*Dukkhadhammasutta*

“Mendicants, when a mendicant truly understands the origin and 1.1  
 ending of all things that entail suffering, then they’ve seen sensual  
 pleasures in such a way that they have no underlying tendency  
 for desire, affection, infatuation, and passion for sensual pleasures.  
 And they’ve awakened to a way of conduct and a way of living  
 such that, when they live in that way, bad, unskillful qualities of  
 covetousness and displeasure don’t overwhelm them.

And how does a mendicant truly understand the origin and 2.1  
 ending of all things that entail suffering?

‘Such is form, such is the origin of form, such is the ending of 2.2  
 form. Such is feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness,  
 such is the origin of consciousness, such is the ending of conscious-  
 ness.’

That’s how a mendicant truly understands the origin and ending 2.7  
 of all things that entail suffering.

And how has a mendicant seen sensual pleasures in such a way 3.1  
 that they have no underlying tendency for desire, affection, infatu-  
 ation, and passion for sensual pleasures?

Suppose there was a pit of glowing coals deeper than a man’s 3.2  
 height, filled with glowing coals that neither flamed nor smoked.  
 Then a person would come along who wants to live and doesn’t  
 want to die, who wants to be happy and recoils from pain. Then  
 two strong men would grab each arm and drag them towards the

pit of glowing coals. They'd writhe and struggle to and fro. Why is that? For that person knows, 'If I fall in that pit of glowing coals, that will result in my death or deadly pain.'

3.5 In the same way, when a mendicant has seen sensual pleasures as like a pit of glowing coals, they have no underlying tendency for desire, affection, infatuation, and passion for sensual pleasures.

4.1 And how has a mendicant awakened to a way of conduct and a way of living such that, when they live in that way, bad, unskillful qualities of covetousness and displeasure don't overwhelm them?

4.2 Suppose a person was to enter a thicket full of thorns. They'd have thorns in front and behind, to the left and right, below and above. So they'd go forward mindfully and come back mindfully, thinking, 'May I not get any thorns!'

4.3 In the same way, whatever in the world seems nice and pleasant is called a thorn in the training of the Noble One. When they understand what a thorn is, they should understand restraint and lack of restraint.

5.1 And how is someone unrestrained?

5.2 Take a mendicant who sees a sight with the eye. If it's pleasant they hold on to it, but if it's unpleasant they dislike it. They live with mindfulness of the body unestablished and their heart restricted. And they don't truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

5.4 They hear a sound ... smell an odor ... taste a flavor ... feel a touch ... know an idea with the mind. If it's pleasant they hold on to it, but if it's unpleasant they dislike it. They live with mindfulness of the body unestablished and a limited heart. And they don't truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

5.7 This is how someone is unrestrained.

6.1 And how is someone restrained?

Take a mendicant who sees a sight with the eye. If it's pleasant 6.2  
they don't hold on to it, and if it's unpleasant they don't dislike it.  
They live with mindfulness of the body established and a limitless  
heart. And they truly understand the freedom of heart and free-  
dom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease  
without anything left over.

They hear a sound ... smell an odor ... taste a flavor ... feel a 6.4  
touch ... know an idea with the mind. If it's pleasant they don't  
hold on to it, and if it's unpleasant they don't dislike it. They live  
with mindfulness of the body established and a limitless heart.  
And they truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by  
wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without  
anything left over.

This is how someone is restrained. 6.7

Though that mendicant conducts themselves and lives in this 7.1  
way, every so often they might lose mindfulness, and bad, unskillful  
memories and thoughts prone to fetters arise. If this happens, their  
mindfulness is slow to come up, but they quickly give them up, get  
rid of, eliminate, and obliterate those thoughts.

Suppose there was an iron cauldron that had been heated all day, 8.1  
and a person let two or three drops of water fall onto it. The drops  
would be slow to fall, but they'd quickly dry up and evaporate.

In the same way, though that mendicant conducts themselves 8.2  
and lives in this way, every so often they might lose mindfulness,  
and bad, unskillful memories and thoughts prone to fetters arise.  
If this happens, their mindfulness is slow to come up, but they  
quickly give them up, get rid of, eliminate, and obliterate those  
thoughts.

This is how a mendicant has awakened to a way of conduct and 8.3  
a way of living such that, when they live in that way, bad, unskillful  
qualities of covetousness and displeasure don't overwhelm them.

While that mendicant conducts themselves in this way and lives 8.4  
in this way, it may be that rulers or their ministers, friends or col-  
leagues, relatives or family would invite them to accept wealth,

saying, ‘Please, mister, why let these ocher robes torment you? Why follow the practice of shaving your head and carrying an alms bowl? Come, return to a lesser life, enjoy wealth, and make merit!’ But it’s quite impossible for a mendicant who conducts themselves in this way and lives in this way to resign the training and return to a lesser life.

- 9.1 Suppose that, although the Ganges river slants, slopes, and inclines to the east, a large crowd were to come along with a spade and basket, saying: ‘We’ll make this Ganges river slant, slope, and incline to the west!’
- 9.2 What do you think, mendicants? Would they still succeed?”
- 9.4 “No, sir. Why is that? The Ganges river slants, slopes, and inclines to the east. It’s not easy to make it slant, slope, and incline to the west. That large crowd will eventually get weary and frustrated.”
- 9.9 “In the same way, while that mendicant conducts themselves in this way and lives in this way, it may be that rulers or their ministers, friends or colleagues, relatives or family should invite them to accept wealth, saying, ‘Please, mister, why let these ocher robes torment you? Why follow the practice of shaving your head and carrying an alms bowl? Come, return to a lesser life, enjoy wealth, and make merit!’ But it’s quite impossible for a mendicant who conducts themselves in this way and lives in this way to resign the training and return to a lesser life.
- 9.14 Why is that? Because for a long time that mendicant’s mind has slanted, sloped, and inclined to seclusion. So it’s impossible for them to return to a lesser life.”

SN 35.245

## The Simile of the Parrot Tree

*Kimsukopamasutta*

- 1.1 Then one mendicant went up to another mendicant and asked, “Reverend, at what point is a mendicant’s vision well purified?”

“When a mendicant truly understands the origin and ending of  
the six fields of contact, at that point their vision is well purified.” 1.3

Not content with that answer, that mendicant went up to a series  
of other mendicants and received the following answers: 2.1

“When a mendicant truly understands the origin and ending  
of the five grasping aggregates, at that point their vision is well  
purified.” 2.3

“When a mendicant truly understands the origin and ending of  
the four primary elements, at that point their vision is well purified.” 3.3

“When a mendicant truly understands that everything that has  
a beginning has an end, at that point their vision is well purified.” 4.3

Not content with any of those answers, that mendicant went up  
to the Buddha and told him what had happened. Then he asked,  
“Sir, at what point is a mendicant’s vision well purified?” 5.1

“Mendicant, suppose a person had never seen a parrot tree.  
They’d go up to someone who had seen a parrot tree and ask them,  
‘Mister, what’s a parrot tree like?’ 6.1

They’d say, ‘A parrot tree is blackish, like a charred stump.’ Now,  
at that time a parrot tree may well have been just as that person saw  
it. 6.4

Not content with that answer, that person would go up to a series  
of other people and receive the following answers: ‘A parrot tree  
is reddish, like a scrap of meat.’ ‘A parrot tree has flaking bark and  
burst pods, like a sirisa.’ ‘A parrot tree has luxuriant, shady foliage,  
like a banyan.’ Now, at each of those times a parrot tree may well  
have been just as those people saw them. 7.1

In the same way, those true persons each answered according to  
what they were focused on when their vision was well purified. 7.16

Suppose there was a king’s frontier citadel with fortified embank-  
ments, ramparts, and arches, and six gates. And it has a gatekeeper  
who is astute, competent, and clever. He keeps strangers out and  
lets known people in. 8.1

A swift pair of messengers would arrive from the east and say to  
the gatekeeper, ‘Mister, where is the lord of the city?’ 8.3

- 8.5 They'd say, 'There he is, sirs, seated at the central square.'
- 8.7 Then that swift pair of messengers would deliver a message of truth to the lord of the city and depart the way they came.
- 8.8 A swift pair of messengers would come from the west ... north ... south ... deliver a message of truth to the lord of the city and depart the way they came.
- 9.1 I've made up this simile to make a point. And this is the point.
- 9.3 'City' is a term for this body made up of the four primary elements, produced by mother and father, built up from rice and porridge, liable to impermanence, to wearing away and erosion, to breaking up and destruction.
- 9.4 'Six gates' is a term for the six interior sense fields.
- 9.5 'Gatekeeper' is a term for mindfulness.
- 9.6 'A swift pair of messengers' is a term for serenity and discernment.
- 9.7 'The lord of the city' is a term for consciousness.
- 9.8 'The central square' is a term for the four primary elements: the elements of earth, water, fire, and air.
- 9.10 'A message of truth' is a term for extinguishment.
- 9.11 'The way they came' is a term for the noble eightfold path, that is, right view, right thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort, right mindfulness, and right immersion."

SN 35.246

## The Simile of the Harp

*Vīṇopamasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, any monk or nun who has desire or greed or hate or delusion or repulsion come up for sights known by the eye should shield their mind from them: 'This path is dangerous and perilous, thorny and tangled; it's a wrong turn, a bad path, a harmful way. This path is frequented by untrue persons, not by true persons. It's not worthy of you.' The mind should be shielded from this when it comes to sights known by the eye.



Any monk or nun who has desire or greed or hate or delusion or  
 repulsion come up for sounds ... smells ... tastes ... touches ...  
 ideas known by the mind should shield their mind against them:  
 ‘This path is dangerous and perilous, thorny and tangled; it’s a  
 wrong turn, a bad path, a harmful way. This path is frequented by  
 untrue persons, not by true persons. It’s not worthy of you.’ The  
 mind should be shielded from this when it comes to ideas known  
 by the mind. 1.6

Suppose the crops have ripened, but the caretaker is negligent. 2.1  
 If an ox fond of crops invades the crops they’d indulge themselves  
 as much as they like.

In the same way, when an unlearned ordinary person doesn’t 2.3  
 exercise restraint when it comes to the six fields of contact, they  
 indulge themselves in the five kinds of sensual stimulation as much  
 as they like.

Suppose the crops have ripened, and the caretaker is diligent. 3.1  
 If an ox fond of crops invades the crops the caretaker would grab  
 them firmly by the muzzle. Then they’d grab them above the hump  
 and hold them fast there. Then they’d give them a good thrashing  
 before driving them away. For a second time, and even a third time,  
 the same thing might happen. As a result, no matter how long they  
 stand or sit in a village or wilderness, that ox fond of crops would  
 never invade that crop again, remembering the beating they got  
 earlier.

In the same way, when a mendicant’s mind is subdued, well 3.14  
 subdued when it comes to the six fields of contact, becomes stilled  
 internally; it settles, unifies, and becomes immersed in samādhi.

Suppose a king or their minister had never heard the sound of 4.1  
 an arched harp. When he first hears the sound, he’d say, ‘My man,  
 what is making this sound, so arousing, sensuous, intoxicating,  
 infatuating, and captivating?’

They’d say to him, ‘That, sir, is an arched harp.’ 4.5

He’d say, ‘Go, my man, fetch me that arched harp.’ 4.7

So they’d fetch it and say, ‘This, sir, is that arched harp.’ 4.9

- 4.12 He'd say, 'I've had enough of that arched harp! Just fetch me the sound.'
- 4.14 They'd say, 'Sir, this arched harp is made of many components assembled together, which make a sound when they're played. That is, it depends on the body, the skin, the neck, the head, the strings, the plectrum, and a person to play it properly. That's how an arched harp is made of many components assembled together, which make a sound when they're played.'
- 4.19 But he'd split that harp into ten pieces or a hundred pieces, then splinter it up. He'd burn the splinters with fire, and reduce them to ashes. Then he'd sweep away the ashes in a strong wind, or float them away down a swift stream.
- 4.22 Then he'd say, 'It seems that there's nothing to this thing called an arched harp or whatever's called an arched harp! But people waste their time with it, negligent and heedless!'
- 4.24 In the same way, a mendicant searches for form, feeling, perception, choices, and consciousness anywhere they might be reborn. As they search in this way, their ideas of 'I' or 'mine' or 'I am' are no more."

SN 35.247

## The Simile of Six Animals

*Chappāṇakopamasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, suppose a person with wounded and festering limbs was to enter a thicket of thorny reeds. The kusa thorns would pierce their feet, and the reed leaves would scratch their limbs. And that would cause that person to experience even more pain and distress.
- 1.4 In the same way, some mendicant goes to a village or a wilderness and gets scolded, 'This venerable, acting like this, behaving like this, is a filthy village thorn.' Understanding that they're a thorn, they should understand restraint and lack of restraint.
- 2.1 And how is someone unrestrained?

Take a mendicant who sees a sight with their eyes. If it's pleasant 2.2  
they hold on to it, but if it's unpleasant they dislike it. They live with  
mindfulness of the body unestablished and their heart restricted.  
And they don't truly understand the freedom of heart and free-  
dom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease  
without anything left over.

When they hear a sound with their ears ... 2.4

When they smell an odor with their nose ... 2.5

When they taste a flavor with their tongue ... 2.6

When they feel a touch with their body ... 2.7

When they know an idea with their mind, if it's pleasant they 2.8  
hold on to it, but if it's unpleasant they dislike it. They live with  
mindfulness of the body unestablished and a limited heart. And  
they don't truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by  
wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without  
anything left over.

Suppose a person was to catch six animals, with diverse terri- 3.1  
tories and feeding grounds, and tie them up with a strong rope.  
They'd catch a snake, a crocodile, a bird, a dog, a jackal, and a mon-  
key, tie each up with a strong rope, then tie a knot in the middle  
and let them loose.

Then those six animals with diverse territories and feeding 3.9  
grounds would each pull towards their own domain and territory.  
The snake would pull one way, thinking 'I'm going into an termite  
mound!' The crocodile would pull another way, thinking 'I'm go-  
ing into the water!' The bird would pull another way, thinking 'I'm  
flying into the sky!' The dog would pull another way, thinking 'I'm  
going into the village!' The jackal would pull another way, think-  
ing 'I'm going into the charnel ground!' The monkey would pull  
another way, thinking 'I'm going into the jungle!' When those six  
animals became exhausted and worn out, the strongest of them  
would get their way, and they'd all have to submit to their control.

In the same way, when a mendicant has not developed or cul- 3.12  
tivated mindfulness of the body, their eye pulls towards pleasant

sights, but is put off by unpleasant sights. Their ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind pulls towards pleasant ideas, but is put off by unpleasant ideas.

3.14 This is how someone is unrestrained.

4.1 And how is someone restrained?

4.2 Take a mendicant who sees a sight with their eyes. If it's pleasant they don't hold on to it, and if it's unpleasant they don't dislike it. They live with mindfulness of the body established and a limitless heart. And they truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

4.4 They hear a sound ... smell an odor ... taste a flavor ... feel a touch ... know an idea with their mind. If it's pleasant they don't hold on to it, and if it's unpleasant they don't dislike it. They live with mindfulness of the body established and a limitless heart. And they truly understand the freedom of heart and freedom by wisdom where those arisen bad, unskillful qualities cease without anything left over.

5.1 Suppose a person was to catch six animals, with diverse territories and feeding grounds, and tie them up with a strong rope. They'd catch a snake, a crocodile, a bird, a dog, a jackal, and a monkey, tie each up with a strong rope, then tether them to a strong post or pillar.

5.9 Then those six animals with diverse territories and feeding grounds would each pull towards their own domain and territory. The snake would pull one way, thinking 'I'm going into an termite mound!' The crocodile would pull another way, thinking 'I'm going into the water!' The bird would pull another way, thinking 'I'm flying into the sky!' The dog would pull another way, thinking 'I'm going into the village!' The jackal would pull another way, thinking 'I'm going into the charnel ground!' The monkey would pull another way, thinking 'I'm going into the jungle!' When those six animals became exhausted and worn out, they'd stand or sit or lie down right by that post or pillar.

In the same way, when a mendicant has developed and cultivated mindfulness of the body, their eye doesn't pull towards pleasant sights, and isn't put off by unpleasant sights. Their ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind doesn't pull towards pleasant ideas, and isn't put off by unpleasant ideas. This is how someone is restrained. 5.12

'A strong post or pillar' is a term for mindfulness of the body. 6.1

So you should train like this: 'We will develop mindfulness of the body. We'll cultivate it, make it our vehicle and our basis, keep it up, consolidate it, and properly implement it.' That's how you should train." 6.2

SN 35.248

## The Sheaf of Barley

*Yavakalāpisutta*

"Mendicants, suppose a sheaf of barley was placed at a crossroads. Then six people would come along carrying flails, and started threshing the sheaf of barley. So that sheaf of barley would be thoroughly threshed by those six flails. Then a seventh person would come along carrying a flail, and they'd give the sheaf of barley a seventh threshing. So that sheaf of barley would be even more thoroughly threshed by that seventh flail. 1.1

In the same way, an unlearned ordinary person is struck in the eye by both pleasant and unpleasant sights. They're struck in the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind by both pleasant and unpleasant ideas. And if that unlearned ordinary person has intentions regarding rebirth into a new state of existence in the future, that foolish person is even more thoroughly struck, like that sheaf of barley threshed by the seventh person. 1.8

Once upon a time, a battle was fought between the gods and the titans. Then Vepacitti, lord of titans, addressed the titans, 'My good sirs, if the titans defeat the gods in this battle, bind Sakka, the lord of gods, by his limbs and neck and bring him to my presence in the citadel of the titans.' 2.1

- 2.4 Meanwhile, Sakka, lord of gods, addressed the gods of the Thirty-Three, 'My good sirs, if the gods defeat the titans in this battle, bind Vepacitti by his limbs and neck and bring him to my presence in the Hall of Justice of the gods.'
- 2.6 In that battle the gods won and the titans lost. So the gods of the Thirty-Three bound Vepacitti by his limbs and neck and brought him to Sakka's presence in the Hall of Justice of the gods.
- 2.8 And there Vepacitti remained bound by his limbs and neck. That is, until he thought, 'It's the gods who are principled, while the titans are unprincipled. Now I belong right here in the castle of the gods.' Then he found himself freed from the bonds on his limbs and neck. He entertained himself, supplied and provided with the five kinds of heavenly sensual stimulation.
- 2.12 But when he thought, 'It's the titans who are principled, while the gods are unprincipled. Now I will go over there to the citadel of the titans,' he found himself bound by his limbs and neck, and the five kinds of heavenly sensual stimulation disappeared.
- 2.15 That's how subtly Vepacitti was bound. But the bonds of Māra are even more subtle than that. When you conceive, you're bound by Māra. Not conceiving, you're free from the Wicked One.
- 3.1 These are all forms of conceiving: 'I am', 'I am this', 'I will be', 'I will not be', 'I will have form', 'I will be formless', 'I will be percipient', 'I will be non-percipient', 'I will be neither percipient nor non-percipient.' Conceit is a disease, a boil, a dart. So mendicants, you should train yourselves like this: 'We will live with a heart that does not conceive.'
- 4.1 These are all disturbances: 'I am', 'I am this', 'I will be', 'I will not be', 'I will have form', 'I will be formless', 'I will be percipient', 'I will be non-percipient', 'I will be neither percipient nor non-percipient.' Disturbances are a disease, a boil, a dart. So mendicants, you should train yourselves like this: 'We will live with a heart free of disturbances.'
- 5.1 These are all tremblings: 'I am', 'I am this', 'I will be', 'I will not be', 'I will have form', 'I will be formless', 'I will be percipient', 'I will

be non-percipient', 'I will be neither percipient nor non-percipient.' Trembling is a disease, a boil, a dart. So mendicants, you should train yourselves like this: 'We will live with a heart free of tremblings.'

These are all proliferations: 'I am', 'I am this', 'I will be', 'I will not be', 'I will have form', 'I will be formless', 'I will be percipient', 'I will be non-percipient', 'I will be neither percipient nor non-percipient.' Proliferation is a disease, a boil, a dart. So mendicants, you should train yourselves like this: 'We will live with a heart free of proliferation.'

These are all conceits: 'I am', 'I am this', 'I will be', 'I will not be', 'I will have form', 'I will be formless', 'I will be percipient', 'I will be non-percipient', 'I will be neither percipient nor non-percipient.' Conceit is a disease, a boil, a dart. So mendicants, you should train yourselves like this: 'We will live with a heart that has struck down conceit.'"

**The Linked Discourses on the six sense fields are complete.**

# LINKED DISCOURSES ON FEELINGS



# The Chapter with Verses

SN 36.1

## Immersion

*Samādhisutta*

“Mendicants, there are these three feelings. What three? 1.1  
Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling. These are the three feel- 1.3  
ings.

Stilled, aware, 2.1  
a mindful disciple of the Buddha  
understands feelings,  
the cause of feelings,

where they cease, 3.1  
and the path that leads to their ending.  
With the ending of feelings, a mendicant  
is hungerless, extinguished.”

SN 36.2

## Pleasure

*Sukhasutta*

“Mendicants, there are these three feelings. What three? 1.1  
Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling. These are the three feel- 1.3  
ings.

- 2.1        Whatever is felt  
              internally and externally—  
              whether pleasure or pain  
              as well as what’s neutral—
- 3.1        having known this as suffering,  
              deceptive, falling apart,  
              one sees them vanish  
                  as they’re experienced again and again:  
              that’s how to be free of desire for them.”

## SN 36.3

## Giving Up

*Pahānasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, there are these three feelings. What three?
- 1.3        Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling.
- 1.4        The underlying tendency to greed should be given up when it  
              comes to pleasant feeling. The underlying tendency to repulsion  
              should be given up when it comes to painful feeling. The under-  
              lying tendency to ignorance should be given up when it comes to  
              neutral feeling.
- 1.5        When a mendicant has given up these underlying tendencies,  
              they’re called a mendicant without underlying tendencies, who  
              sees rightly, has cut off craving, untied the fetters, and by rightly  
              comprehending conceit has made an end of suffering.
- 2.1        When you feel pleasure  
              without understanding feeling,  
              the underlying tendency to greed is there,  
              if you don’t see the escape.
- 3.1        When you feel pain  
              without understanding feeling,  
              the underlying tendency to repulsion is there,

if you don't see the escape.

As for that peaceful, neutral feeling: 4.1  
 he of vast wisdom has taught  
 that if you relish it,  
 you're still not released from suffering.

But when a mendicant is keen, 5.1  
 not neglecting situational awareness,  
 that astute person  
 understands all feelings.

Completely understanding feelings, 6.1  
 they're without defilements in this very life.  
 That knowledge master is firm in principle;  
 when their body breaks up, they can't be reckoned."

#### SN 36.4

### The Abyss

#### *Pātālasutta*

"Mendicants, when an unlearned ordinary person says that there's a 1.1  
 hellish abyss under the ocean, they're speaking of something that  
 doesn't exist.

'Hellish abyss' is a term for painful physical feelings. 1.5

When an unlearned ordinary person experiences painful physi- 1.6  
 cal feelings they sorrow and wail and lament, beating their breast  
 and falling into confusion. They're called an unlearned ordinary  
 person who hasn't stood up in the hellish abyss and has gained no  
 footing.

When a learned noble disciple experiences painful physical feel- 1.8  
 ings they don't sorrow or wail or lament, beating their breast and  
 falling into confusion. They're called a learned noble disciple who  
 has stood up in the hellish abyss and gained a footing.

- 2.1 If you can't abide  
those painful physical feelings  
that arise and sap your vitality;  
if you tremble at their touch,
- 3.1 weeping and wailing,  
a weakling lacking strength—  
you won't stand up in the hellish abyss  
and gain a footing.
- 4.1 If you can endure  
those painful physical feelings  
that arise and sap your vitality;  
if you don't tremble at their touch—  
you stand up in the hellish abyss  
and gain a footing."

SN 36.5

## Should Be Seen

*Daṭṭhabbasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, there are these three feelings. What three?
- 1.3 Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling.
- 1.4 Pleasant feeling should be seen as suffering. Painful feeling should be seen as a dart. Neutral feeling should be seen as impermanent.
- 1.5 When a mendicant has seen these three feelings in this way, they're called a mendicant who sees rightly, has cut off craving, untied the fetters, and by rightly comprehending conceit has made an end of suffering.
- 2.1 A mendicant who sees pleasure as pain,  
and suffering as a dart,  
and that peaceful, neutral feeling  
as impermanent

sees rightly; 3.1  
 they completely understand feelings.  
 Completely understanding feelings,  
 they're without defilements in this very life.  
 That knowledge master is firm in principle;  
 when their body breaks up, they can't be reckoned."

SN 36.6

## An Arrow

*Sallasutta*

"Mendicants, an unlearned ordinary person feels pleasant, painful, 1.1  
 and neutral feelings. A learned noble disciple also feels pleasant,  
 painful, and neutral feelings. What, then, is the difference between  
 a learned noble disciple and an ordinary unlearned person?"

"Our teachings are rooted in the Buddha. . . ." 1.4

"When an unlearned ordinary person experiences painful phys- 1.5  
 ical feelings they sorrow and wail and lament, beating their breast  
 and falling into confusion. They experience two feelings: physical  
 and mental.

It's like a person who is struck with an arrow, only to be struck 1.8  
 with a second arrow. That person experiences the feeling of two  
 arrows.

In the same way, when an unlearned ordinary person experi- 1.11  
 ences painful physical feelings they sorrow and wail and lament,  
 beating their breast and falling into confusion. They experience  
 two feelings: physical and mental.

When they're touched by painful feeling, they resist it. The 1.14  
 underlying tendency for repulsion towards painful feeling underlies  
 that.

When touched by painful feeling they look forward to enjoying 1.16  
 sensual pleasures. Why is that? Because an unlearned ordinary  
 person doesn't understand any escape from painful feeling apart  
 from sensual pleasures. Since they look forward to enjoying sensual

pleasures, the underlying tendency to greed for pleasant feeling underlies that.

- 1.20 They don't truly understand feelings' origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape. The underlying tendency to ignorance about neutral feeling underlies that.
- 1.22 If they feel a pleasant feeling, they feel it attached. If they feel a painful feeling, they feel it attached. If they feel a neutral feeling, they feel it attached.
- 1.25 They're called an unlearned ordinary person who is attached to rebirth, old age, and death, to sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress; who is attached to suffering, I say.
- 2.1 When a learned noble disciple experiences painful physical feelings they don't sorrow or wail or lament, beating their breast and falling into confusion. They experience one feeling: physical, not mental.
- 3.1 It's like a person who is struck with an arrow, but was not struck with a second arrow. That person would experience the feeling of one arrow.
- 3.4 In the same way, when a learned noble disciple experiences painful physical feelings they don't sorrow or wail or lament, beating their breast and falling into confusion. They experience one feeling: physical, not mental.
- 3.7 When they're touched by painful feeling, they don't resist it. There's no underlying tendency for repulsion towards painful feeling underlying that.
- 3.9 When touched by painful feeling they don't look forward to enjoying sensual pleasures. Why is that? Because a learned noble disciple understands an escape from painful feeling apart from sensual pleasures. Since they don't look forward to enjoying sensual pleasures, there's no underlying tendency to greed for pleasant feeling underlying that.
- 3.13 They truly understand feelings' origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape. There's no underlying tendency to ignorance about neutral feeling underlying that.

If they feel a pleasant feeling, they feel it detached. If they feel a painful feeling, they feel it detached. If they feel a neutral feeling, they feel it detached. 3.15

They're called a learned noble disciple who is detached from rebirth, old age, and death, from sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress; who is detached from suffering, I say. 3.18

This is the difference between a learned noble disciple and an unlearned ordinary person. 3.19

A wise and learned person isn't affected  
by feelings of pleasure and pain.  
This is the great difference in skill  
between the wise and the ordinary. 4.1

A learned person who has appraised the teaching  
discerns this world and the next.  
Desirable things don't disturb their mind,  
nor are they repelled by the undesirable. 5.1

Both favoring and opposing  
are cleared and ended, they are no more.  
Knowing the stainless, sorrowless state,  
they who have gone beyond rebirth  
understand rightly." 6.1

SN 36.7

## The Infirmary (1st)

*Paṭhamagelaññasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Vesālī, at the Great Wood, in the hall with the peaked roof. 1.1

Then in the late afternoon, the Buddha came out of retreat and went to the infirmary, where he sat down on the seat spread out, and addressed the mendicants: 1.2

- 2.1 “Mendicants, a mendicant should await their time mindful and aware. This is my instruction to you.
- 3.1 And how is a mendicant mindful? It’s when a mendicant meditates by observing an aspect of the body—keen, aware, and mindful, rid of covetousness and displeasure for the world. They meditate observing an aspect of feelings . . . They meditate observing an aspect of the mind . . . They meditate observing an aspect of principles—keen, aware, and mindful, rid of covetousness and displeasure for the world. That’s how a mendicant is mindful.
- 4.1 And how is a mendicant aware? It’s when a mendicant acts with situational awareness when going out and coming back; when looking ahead and aside; when bending and extending the limbs; when bearing the outer robe, bowl and robes; when eating, drinking, chewing, and tasting; when urinating and defecating; when walking, standing, sitting, sleeping, waking, speaking, and keeping silent. That’s how a mendicant acts with situational awareness. A mendicant should await their time mindful and aware. This is my instruction to you.
- 5.1 While a mendicant is meditating like this—mindful, aware, diligent, keen, and resolute—if pleasant feelings arise, they understand: ‘A pleasant feeling has arisen in me. That’s dependent, not independent. Dependent on what? Dependent on my own body. But this body is impermanent, conditioned, dependently originated. So how could a pleasant feeling be permanent, since it has arisen dependent on a body that is impermanent, conditioned, and dependently originated?’ They meditate observing impermanence, vanishing, dispassion, cessation, and letting go in the body and pleasant feeling. As they do so, they give up the underlying tendency for greed for the body and pleasant feeling.
- 6.1 While a mendicant is meditating like this—mindful, aware, diligent, keen, and resolute—if painful feelings arise, they understand: ‘A painful feeling has arisen in me. That’s dependent, not independent. Dependent on what? Dependent on my own body. But this body is impermanent, conditioned, dependently originated. So



how could a painful feeling be permanent, since it has arisen dependent on a body that is impermanent, conditioned, and dependently originated?’ They meditate observing impermanence, vanishing, dispassion, cessation, and letting go in the body and painful feeling. As they do so, they give up the underlying tendency for repulsion towards the body and painful feeling.

While a mendicant is meditating like this—mindful, aware, diligent, keen, and resolute—if neutral feelings arise, they understand: ‘A neutral feeling has arisen in me. That’s dependent, not independent. Dependent on what? Dependent on my own body. But this body is impermanent, conditioned, dependently originated. So how could a neutral feeling be permanent, since it has arisen dependent on a body that is impermanent, conditioned, and dependently originated?’ They meditate observing impermanence, vanishing, dispassion, cessation, and letting go in the body and neutral feeling. As they do so, they give up the underlying tendency for ignorance towards the body and neutral feeling. 7.1

If they feel a pleasant feeling, they understand that it’s impermanent, that they’re not attached to it, and that they don’t take pleasure in it. If they feel a painful feeling, they understand that it’s impermanent, that they’re not attached to it, and that they don’t take pleasure in it. If they feel a neutral feeling, they understand that it’s impermanent, that they’re not attached to it, and that they don’t take pleasure in it. 8.1

If they feel a pleasant feeling, they feel it detached. If they feel a painful feeling, they feel it detached. If they feel a neutral feeling, they feel it detached. 8.4

Feeling the end of the body approaching, they understand: ‘I feel the end of the body approaching.’ Feeling the end of life approaching, they understand: ‘I feel the end of life approaching.’ They understand: ‘When my body breaks up and my life has come to an end, everything that’s felt, since I no longer take pleasure in it, will become cool right here.’ 8.7

- 9.1 Suppose an oil lamp depended on oil and a wick to burn. As the oil and the wick are used up, it would be extinguished due to lack of fuel.
- 9.3 In the same way, feeling the end of the body approaching, a mendicant understands: ‘I feel the end of the body approaching.’ Feeling the end of life approaching, a mendicant understands: ‘I feel the end of life approaching.’ They understand: ‘When my body breaks up and my life is over, everything that’s felt, since I no longer take pleasure in it, will become cool right here.’”

SN 36.8

## The Infirmary (2nd)

*Dutiyaḡelaññasutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Vesālī, at the Great Wood, in the hall with the peaked roof.
- 1.2 Then in the late afternoon, the Buddha came out of retreat and went to the infirmary, where he sat down on the seat spread out, and addressed the mendicants:
- 2.1 “Mendicants, a mendicant should await their time mindful and aware. This is my instruction to you.
- 3.1 And how is a mendicant mindful? It’s when a mendicant meditates by observing an aspect of the body—keen, aware, and mindful, rid of covetousness and displeasure for the world. They meditate observing an aspect of feelings ... They meditate observing an aspect of the mind ... They meditate observing an aspect of principles—keen, aware, and mindful, rid of covetousness and displeasure for the world. That’s how a mendicant is mindful.
- 4.1 And how is a mendicant aware? It’s when a mendicant acts with situational awareness when going out and coming back; when looking ahead and aside; when bending and extending the limbs; when bearing the outer robe, bowl and robes; when eating, drinking, chewing, and tasting; when urinating and defecating; when

walking, standing, sitting, sleeping, waking, speaking, and keeping silent. That's how a mendicant is aware.

A mendicant should await their time mindful and aware. This is my instruction to you. 4.4

While a mendicant is meditating like this—mindful, aware, diligent, keen, and resolute—if pleasant feelings arise, they understand: 'A pleasant feeling has arisen in me. That's dependent, not independent. Dependent on what? Dependent on this very contact. But this contact is impermanent, conditioned, dependently originated. So how could a pleasant feeling be permanent, since it has arisen dependent on contact that is impermanent, conditioned, and dependently originated?' They meditate observing impermanence, vanishing, dispassion, cessation, and letting go in contact and pleasant feeling. As they do so, they give up the underlying tendency for greed for contact and pleasant feeling. 5.1

While a mendicant is meditating like this—mindful, aware, diligent, keen, and resolute—if painful feelings arise ... if neutral feelings arise, they understand: 'A neutral feeling has arisen in me. That's dependent, not independent. Dependent on what? Dependent on this very contact. 6.1

*(Tell in full as in the previous discourse.)*

They understand: 'When my body breaks up and my life is over, everything that's felt, since I no longer take pleasure in it, will become cool right here.' 6.10

Suppose an oil lamp depended on oil and a wick to burn. As the oil and the wick are used up, it would be extinguished due to lack of fuel. 7.1

In the same way, feeling the end of the body approaching, a mendicant understands: 'I feel the end of the body approaching.' Feeling the end of life approaching, they understand: 'I feel the end of life approaching.' They understand: 'When my body breaks up and my life is over, everything that's felt, since I no longer take pleasure in it, will become cool right here.'" 7.3

SN 36.9

## Impermanent

*Aniccasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, these three feelings are impermanent, conditioned, dependently originated, liable to end, vanish, fade away, and cease. What three?
- 1.3 Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling. These are the three feelings that are impermanent, conditioned, dependently originated, liable to end, vanish, fade away, and cease.”

SN 36.10

## Rooted in Contact

*Phassamūlakasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, these three feelings are born, rooted, sourced, and conditioned by contact. What three?
- 1.3 Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling.
- 1.4 Pleasant feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as pleasant. With the cessation of that contact to be experienced as pleasant, the corresponding pleasant feeling ceases and stops. Painful feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as painful. With the cessation of that contact to be experienced as painful, the corresponding painful feeling ceases and stops. Neutral feeling arises dependent on a contact to be experienced as neutral. With the cessation of that contact to be experienced as neutral, the corresponding neutral feeling ceases and stops.
- 1.10 When you rub two sticks together, heat is generated and fire is produced. But when you part the sticks and lay them aside, any corresponding heat ceases and stops.
- 1.11 In the same way, these three feelings are born, rooted, sourced, and conditioned by contact. The appropriate feeling arises de-

pendent on the corresponding contact. When the corresponding contact ceases, the appropriate feeling ceases.”

# The Chapter on In Private

SN 36.11

## In Private

*Rahogatasutta*

- 1.1 Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.2 “Just now, sir, as I was in private retreat this thought came to mind. The Buddha has spoken of three feelings. Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling. These are the three feelings the Buddha has spoken of.
- 1.6 But the Buddha has also said: ‘Suffering includes whatever is felt.’ What was the Buddha referring to when he said this?”
- 2.1 “Good, good, mendicant! I have spoken of these three feelings. Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling. These are the three feelings I have spoken of.
- 2.5 But I have also said: ‘Suffering includes whatever is felt.’
- 2.7 When I said this I was referring to the impermanence of conditions, to the fact that conditions are liable to end, vanish, fade away, cease, and perish.
- 2.15 But I have also explained the progressive cessation of conditions. For someone who has attained the first absorption, speech has ceased. For someone who has attained the second absorption, the placing of the mind and keeping it connected have ceased. For someone who has attained the third absorption, rapture has ceased. For someone who has attained the fourth absorption, breathing

has ceased. For someone who has attained the dimension of infinite space, the perception of form has ceased. For someone who has attained the dimension of infinite consciousness, the perception of the dimension of infinite space has ceased. For someone who has attained the dimension of nothingness, the perception of the dimension of infinite consciousness has ceased. For someone who has attained the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception, the perception of the dimension of nothingness has ceased. For someone who has attained the cessation of perception and feeling, perception and feeling have ceased. For a mendicant who has ended the defilements, greed, hate, and delusion have ceased.

And I have also explained the progressive stilling of conditions. 2.26  
For someone who has attained the first absorption, speech has stilled. For someone who has attained the second absorption, the placing of the mind and keeping it connected have stilled. . . . For someone who has attained the cessation of perception and feeling, perception and feeling have stilled. For a mendicant who has ended the defilements, greed, hate, and delusion have stilled.

There are these six levels of tranquility. For someone who has 2.31  
attained the first absorption, speech has been tranquilized. For someone who has attained the second absorption, the placing of the mind and keeping it connected have been tranquilized. For someone who has attained the third absorption, rapture has been tranquilized. For someone who has attained the fourth absorption, breathing has been tranquilized. For someone who has attained the cessation of perception and feeling, perception and feeling have been tranquilized. For a mendicant who has ended the defilements, greed, hate, and delusion have been tranquilized.”

SN 36.12

## In the Sky (1st)

*Paṭhamaākāsasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, various winds blow in the sky. Winds blow from the east, the west, the north, and the south. There are winds that are dusty and dustless, cool and warm, weak and strong.
- 1.3 In the same way, various feelings arise in this body: pleasant, painful, and neutral feelings.
- 2.1 There are many and various winds that blow in the sky.  
From the east they come, also the west,  
the north, and then the south.
- 3.1 They are dusty and dustless,  
cool and sometimes warm,  
strong and weak;  
these are the different breezes that blow.
- 4.1 So too, in this body  
feelings arise,  
pleasant and painful,  
and those that are neutral.
- 5.1 But when a mendicant is keen,  
not neglecting situational awareness,  
that astute person  
understands all feelings.
- 6.1 Completely understanding feelings,  
they’re without defilements in this very life.  
That knowledge master is firm in principle;  
when their body breaks up, they can’t be reckoned.”



SN 36.13

## In the Sky (2nd)

*Dutiyaākāśasutta*

“Mendicants, various winds blow in the sky. Winds blow from the 1.1  
east, the west, the north, and the south. There are winds that are  
dusty and dustless, cool and warm, weak and strong.

In the same way, various feelings arise in this body: pleasant, 1.3  
painful, and neutral feelings.”

SN 36.14

## A Guest House

*Agārasutta*

“Mendicants, suppose there was a guest house. Lodgers come from 1.1  
the east, west, north, and south. Aristocrats, brahmins, peasants,  
and menials all stay there.

In the same way, various feelings arise in this body: pleasant, 1.2  
painful, and neutral feelings. Also pleasant, painful, and neutral  
feelings of the flesh arise. Also pleasant, painful, and neutral feel-  
ings not of the flesh arise.”

SN 36.15

## With Ānanda (1st)

*Paṭhamaānandasutta*

Then Venerable Ānanda went up to the Buddha ... sat down to 1.1  
one side, and said to him:

“Sir, what is feeling? What’s the origin of feeling? What’s the ces- 1.2  
sation of feeling? What’s the practice that leads to the cessation of  
feeling? And what is feeling’s gratification, drawback, and escape?”

“Ānanda, there are these three feelings: pleasant, painful, and 1.4  
neutral. These are called feeling.

- 1.7 Feeling originates from contact. When contact ceases, feeling ceases.
- 1.9 The practice that leads to the cessation of feelings is simply this noble eightfold path, that is: right view, right thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort, right mindfulness, and right immersion.
- 1.11 The pleasure and happiness that arise from feeling: this is its gratification.
- 1.12 That feeling is impermanent, suffering, and perishable: this is its drawback.
- 1.13 Removing and giving up desire and greed for feeling: this is its escape.
- 1.14 But I have also explained the progressive cessation of conditions. For someone who has attained the first absorption, speech has ceased. ... For someone who has attained the cessation of perception and feeling, perception and feeling have ceased. For a mendicant who has ended the defilements, greed, hate, and delusion have ceased.
- 1.18 And I have also explained the progressive stilling of conditions. For someone who has attained the first absorption, speech has stilled. ... For someone who has attained the cessation of perception and feeling, perception and feeling have stilled. For a mendicant who has ended the defilements, greed, hate, and delusion have stilled.
- 1.22 And I have also explained the progressive tranquilizing of conditions. For someone who has attained the first absorption, speech has been tranquilized. ... For someone who has attained the dimension of infinite space, the perception of form has been tranquilized. For someone who has attained the dimension of infinite consciousness, the perception of the dimension of infinite space has been tranquilized. For someone who has attained the dimension of nothingness, the perception of the dimension of infinite consciousness has been tranquilized. For someone who has attained the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception, the percep-

tion of the dimension of nothingness has been tranquilized. For someone who has attained the cessation of perception and feeling, perception and feeling have been tranquilized. For a mendicant who has ended the defilements, greed, hate, and delusion have been tranquilized.”

SN 36.16

## With Ānanda (2nd)

*Dutiyaānandasutta*

Then Venerable Ānanda went up to the Buddha, bowed, and sat 1.1  
down to one side. The Buddha said to him, “Ānanda, what is feel-  
ing? What’s the origin of feeling? What’s the cessation of feeling?  
What’s the practice that leads to the cessation of feeling? And what  
is feeling’s gratification, drawback, and escape?”

“Our teachings are rooted in the Buddha. He is our guide and 1.4  
our refuge. Sir, may the Buddha himself please clarify the meaning  
of this. The mendicants will listen and remember it.”

“Well then, Ānanda, listen and apply your mind well, I will 1.5  
speak.”

“Yes, sir,” Ānanda replied. The Buddha said this: 1.6

“Ānanda, there are these three feelings: pleasant, painful, and 1.8  
neutral. These are called feeling. . . .

For a mendicant who has ended the defilements, greed, hate, 1.12  
and delusion have been tranquilized.”

SN 36.17

## With Several Mendicants (1st)

*Paṭhamasambahulasutta*

Then several mendicants went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down 1.1  
to one side, and said to him:

- 1.2 “Sir, what is feeling? What’s the origin of feeling? What’s the cessation of feeling? What’s the practice that leads to the cessation of feeling? And what is feeling’s gratification, drawback, and escape?”
- 1.4 “Mendicants, there are these three feelings: pleasant, painful, and neutral. These are called feeling.
- 1.7 Feeling originates from contact. When contact ceases, feeling ceases.
- 1.9 The practice that leads to the cessation of feelings is simply this noble eightfold path, that is: right view, right thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort, right mindfulness, and right immersion.
- 1.11 The pleasure and happiness that arise from feeling: this is its gratification. That feeling is impermanent, suffering, and perishable: this is its drawback. Removing and giving up desire and greed for feeling: this is its escape.
- 2.1 But I have also explained the progressive cessation of conditions.  
...
- 2.13 For a mendicant who has ended the defilements, greed, hate, and delusion have been tranquilized.”

SN 36.18

## With Several Mendicants (2nd)

*Dutiyasambahulasutta*

- 1.1 Then several mendicants went up to the Buddha ... The Buddha said to them:
- 1.3 “Mendicants, what is feeling? What’s the origin of feeling? What’s the cessation of feeling? What’s the practice that leads to the cessation of feeling? And what is feeling’s gratification, drawback, and escape?”
- 1.5 “Our teachings are rooted in the Buddha. ...”
- 1.6 “Mendicants, there are these three feelings: pleasant, painful, and neutral. These are called feeling. ...”  
(*Tell in full as in the previous discourse.*)

SN 36.19

## With Pañcakaṅga

*Pañcakaṅgasutta*

Then the chamberlain Pañcakaṅga went up to Venerable Udāyī, 1.1  
bowed, sat down to one side, and asked him, “Sir, how many feel-  
ings has the Buddha spoken of?”

“Chamberlain, the Buddha has spoken of three feelings: pleas- 1.3  
ant, painful, and neutral. The Buddha has spoken of these three  
feelings.”

When he said this, Pañcakaṅga said to Udāyī, “Sir, Udāyī, the 1.6  
Buddha hasn’t spoken of three feelings. He’s spoken of two feel-  
ings: pleasant and painful. The Buddha said that neutral feeling is  
included as a peaceful and subtle kind of pleasure.”

For a second time, Udāyī said to him, “The Buddha hasn’t spoken 2.1  
of two feelings, he’s spoken of three.”

For a second time, Pañcakaṅga said to Udāyī, “The Buddha 2.6  
hasn’t spoken of three feelings, he’s spoken of two.”

And for a third time, Udāyī said to him, “The Buddha hasn’t 3.1  
spoken of two feelings, he’s spoken of three.”

And for a third time, Pañcakaṅga said to Udāyī, “The Buddha 3.6  
hasn’t spoken of three feelings, he’s spoken of two.”

But neither was able to persuade the other. 3.11

Venerable Ānanda heard this discussion between Udāyī and 3.12  
Pañcakaṅga. He went to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side,  
and informed the Buddha of all they had discussed.

“Ānanda, the explanation by the mendicant Udāyī, which the 5.1  
chamberlain Pañcakaṅga didn’t agree with, was quite correct. But  
the explanation by Pañcakaṅga, which Udāyī didn’t agree with, was  
also quite correct.

In one explanation I’ve spoken of two feelings. In another ex- 5.3  
planation I’ve spoken of three feelings, or five, six, eighteen, thirty-  
six, or a hundred and eight feelings.

- 5.10 I've explained the teaching in all these different ways. This being so, you can expect that those who don't concede, approve, or agree with what has been well spoken will argue, quarrel, and dispute, continually wounding each other with barbed words.
- 5.12 I've explained the teaching in all these different ways. This being so, you can expect that those who do concede, approve, or agree with what has been well spoken will live in harmony, appreciating each other, without quarreling, blending like milk and water, and regarding each other with kindly eyes.
- 6.1 There are these five kinds of sensual stimulation. What five? Sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. ... Touches known by the body that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. These are the five kinds of sensual stimulation. The pleasure and happiness that arise from these five kinds of sensual stimulation is called sensual pleasure. There are those who would say that this is the highest pleasure and happiness that sentient beings experience. But I don't acknowledge that. Why is that? Because there is another pleasure that is finer than that.
- 7.1 And what is that pleasure? It's when a mendicant, quite secluded from sensual pleasures, secluded from unskillful qualities, enters and remains in the first absorption, which has the rapture and bliss born of seclusion, while placing the mind and keeping it connected. This is a pleasure that is finer than that. There are those who would say that this is the highest pleasure and happiness that sentient beings experience. But I don't acknowledge that. Why is that? Because there is another pleasure that is finer than that.
- 8.1 And what is that pleasure? It's when, as the placing of the mind and keeping it connected are stilled, a mendicant enters and remains in the second absorption, which has the rapture and bliss born of immersion, with internal clarity and mind at one, without placing the mind and keeping it connected. This is a pleasure that is finer than that. There are those who would say that this is the highest pleasure and happiness that sentient beings experience. But

I don't acknowledge that. Why is that? Because there is another pleasure that is finer than that.

And what is that pleasure? It's when, with the fading away of rap- 9.1  
 ture, a mendicant enters and remains in the third absorption, where they meditate with equanimity, mindful and aware, personally experiencing the bliss of which the noble ones declare, 'Equanimous and mindful, one meditates in bliss.' This is a pleasure that is finer than that. There are those who would say that this is the highest pleasure and happiness that sentient beings experience. But I don't acknowledge that. Why is that? Because there is another pleasure that is finer than that.

And what is that pleasure? It's when, giving up pleasure and pain, 10.1  
 and ending former happiness and sadness, a mendicant enters and remains in the fourth absorption, without pleasure or pain, with pure equanimity and mindfulness. This is a pleasure that is finer than that. There are those who would say that this is the highest pleasure and happiness that sentient beings experience. But I don't acknowledge that. Why is that? Because there is another pleasure that is finer than that.

And what is that pleasure? It's when a mendicant—going totally 11.1  
 beyond perceptions of form, with the ending of perceptions of impingement, not focusing on perceptions of diversity—aware that 'space is infinite', enters and remains in the dimension of infinite space. This is a pleasure that is finer than that. There are those who would say that this is the highest pleasure and happiness that sentient beings experience. But I don't acknowledge that. Why is that? Because there is another pleasure that is finer than that.

And what is that pleasure? It's when a mendicant, going totally 12.1  
 beyond the dimension of infinite space, aware that 'consciousness is infinite', enters and remains in the dimension of infinite consciousness. This is a pleasure that is finer than that. There are those who would say that this is the highest pleasure and happiness that sentient beings experience. But I don't acknowledge that. Why is that? Because there is another pleasure that is finer than that.

- 13.1 And what is that pleasure? It's when a mendicant, going totally beyond the dimension of infinite consciousness, aware that 'there is nothing at all', enters and remains in the dimension of nothingness. This is a pleasure that is finer than that. There are those who would say that this is the highest pleasure and happiness that sentient beings experience. But I don't acknowledge that. Why is that? Because there is another pleasure that is finer than that.
- 14.1 And what is that pleasure? It's when a mendicant, going totally beyond the dimension of nothingness, enters and remains in the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception. This is a pleasure that is finer than that. There are those who would say that this is the highest pleasure and happiness that sentient beings experience. But I don't acknowledge that. Why is that? Because there is another pleasure that is finer than that.
- 15.1 And what is that pleasure? It's when a mendicant, going totally beyond the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception, enters and remains in the cessation of perception and feeling. This is a pleasure that is finer than that.
- 16.1 It's possible that wanderers of other religions might say: 'The ascetic Gotama spoke of the cessation of perception and feeling, and he includes it in happiness. What's up with that?'
- 16.4 When wanderers of other religions say this, you should say to them: 'Reverends, when the Buddha describes what's included in happiness, he's not just referring to pleasant feeling. The Realized One describes pleasure as included in happiness wherever it is found, and in whatever context.'

SN 36.20

## A Mendicant

*Bhikkhusutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, in one explanation I've spoken of two feelings. In another explanation I've spoken of three feelings, or five, six, eighteen, thirty-six, or a hundred and eight feelings.



I've taught the Dhamma with all these explanations. This being 1.2  
so, you can expect that those who don't concede, approve, or agree  
with what has been well spoken will argue, quarrel, and dispute,  
continually wounding each other with barbed words.

I've taught the Dhamma with all these explanations. This being 1.4  
so, you can expect that those who do concede, approve, or agree  
with what has been well spoken will live in harmony, appreciating  
each other, without quarreling, blending like milk and water, and  
regarding each other with kindly eyes.

There are these five kinds of sensual stimulation. . . . 2.1

It's possible that wanderers of other religions might say: "The 2.2  
ascetic Gotama spoke of the cessation of perception and feeling,  
and he includes it in happiness. What's up with that?"

Mendicants, when wanderers of other religions say this, you 2.5  
should say to them: "Reverends, when the Buddha describes what's  
included in happiness, he's not just referring to pleasant feeling. The  
Realized One describes pleasure as included in happiness wherever  
it is found, and in whatever context."

# The Chapter on the Explanation of the Hundred and Eight

SN 36.21

With Sīvaka

*Sīvakasutta*

1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha, in the Bamboo Grove, the squirrels' feeding ground.

1.2 Then the wanderer Moḷiyasīvaka went up to the Buddha and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side and said to the Buddha:

1.4 “Master Gotama, there are some ascetics and brahmins who have this doctrine and view: ‘Everything this individual experiences—pleasurable, painful, or neutral—is because of past deeds.’ What does Master Gotama say about this?”

2.1 “Sīvaka, some feelings stem from bile disorders. You can know this from your own personal experience, and it is generally deemed to be true. Since this is so, the ascetics and brahmins whose view is that everything an individual experiences is because of past deeds go beyond personal experience and beyond what is generally deemed to be true. So those ascetics and brahmins are wrong, I say.

Some feelings stem from phlegm disorders ... wind disorders 3.1  
 ... their conjunction ... change in weather ... not taking care of  
 yourself ... overexertion ... Some feelings are the result of past  
 deeds. You can know this from your own personal experience, and  
 it is generally deemed to be true. Since this is so, the ascetics and  
 brahmins whose view is that everything an individual experiences  
 is because of past deeds go beyond personal experience and beyond  
 what is generally deemed to be true. So those ascetics and brahmins  
 are wrong, I say.”

When he said this, the wanderer Moliyasivaka said to the Bud- 4.1  
 dha, “Excellent, Master Gotama! Excellent! ... From this day  
 forth, may Master Gotama remember me as a lay follower who has  
 gone for refuge for life.”

“Bile, phlegm, and wind, 5.1  
 their conjunction, and the weather,  
 not taking care of yourself, overexertion,  
 and the result of deeds is the eighth.”

SN 36.22

## The Explanation of the Hundred and Eight

*Aṭṭhasatasaṭṭa*

“Mendicants, I will teach you an exposition of the teaching on the 1.1  
 hundred and eight. Listen ...

And what is the exposition of the teaching on the hundred and 1.3  
 eight? Mendicants, in one explanation I’ve spoken of two feelings.  
 In another explanation I’ve spoken of three feelings, or five, six,  
 eighteen, thirty-six, or a hundred and eight feelings.

And what are the two feelings? Physical and mental. These are 2.1  
 called the two feelings.

And what are the three feelings? Pleasant, painful, and neutral 2.4  
 feelings. ...

- 2.7 And what are the five feelings? The faculties of pleasure, pain, happiness, sadness, and equanimity. ...
- 2.10 And what are the six feelings? Feeling born of eye contact ... ear contact ... nose contact ... tongue contact ... body contact ... mind contact. ...
- 2.14 And what are the eighteen feelings? There are six preoccupations with happiness, six preoccupations with sadness, and six preoccupations with equanimity. ...
- 2.17 And what are the thirty-six feelings? Six kinds of lay happiness and six kinds of renunciate happiness. Six kinds of lay sadness and six kinds of renunciate sadness. Six kinds of lay equanimity and six kinds of renunciate equanimity. ...
- 2.20 And what are the hundred and eight feelings? Thirty six feelings in the past, future, and present. These are called the hundred and eight feelings.
- 2.23 This is the exposition of the teaching on the hundred and eight.”

## SN 36.23

## With a Mendicant

*Aññatarabhikkhusutta*

- 1.1 Then a mendicant went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.2 “Sir, what is feeling? What’s the origin of feeling? What’s the practice that leads to the origin of feeling? What’s the cessation of feeling? What’s the practice that leads to the cessation of feeling? And what is feeling’s gratification, drawback, and escape?”
- 2.1 “Mendicant, there are these three feelings: pleasant, painful, and neutral. These are called feeling.
- 2.4 Feeling originates from contact. Craving is the practice that leads to the origin of feeling.
- 2.6 When contact ceases, feeling ceases. The practice that leads to the cessation of feelings is simply this noble eightfold path, that is:

right view, right thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort, right mindfulness, and right immersion.

The pleasure and happiness that arise from feeling: this is its gratification. 2.9

That feeling is impermanent, suffering, and perishable: this is its drawback. 2.10

Removing and giving up desire and greed for feeling: this is its escape.” 2.11

SN 36.24

## Before

*Pubbasutta*

“Mendicants, before my awakening—when I was still unawakened but intent on awakening—I thought: ‘What is feeling? What’s the origin of feeling? What’s the practice that leads to the origin of feeling? What’s the cessation of feeling? What’s the practice that leads to the cessation of feeling? And what is feeling’s gratification, drawback, and escape?’ 1.1

Then it occurred to me: ‘There are these three feelings: pleasant, painful, and neutral. These are called feeling. Feeling originates from contact. Craving is the practice that leads to the origin of feeling ... Removing and giving up desire and greed for feeling: this is its escape.’” 1.4

SN 36.25

## Knowledge

*Ñāṇasutta*

“‘These are the feelings.’ Such was the vision, knowledge, wisdom, realization, and light that arose in me regarding teachings not learned before from another. 1.1

‘This is the origin of feeling.’ ... 1.2

- 1.3 ‘This is the practice that leads to the origin of feeling.’ ...
- 1.4 ‘This is the cessation of feeling.’ ...
- 1.5 ‘This is the practice that leads to the cessation of feeling.’ ...
- 1.6 ‘This is the gratification of feeling.’ ...
- 1.7 ‘This is the drawback of feeling.’ ...
- 1.8 ‘This is the escape from feeling.’ Such was the vision, knowledge, wisdom, realization, and light that arose in me regarding teachings not learned before from another.”

SN 36.26

## With Several Mendicants

*Sambahulabhikkhusutta*

- 1.1 Then several mendicants went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.2 “Sir, what is feeling? What’s the origin of feeling? What’s the practice that leads to the origin of feeling? What’s the cessation of feeling? What’s the practice that leads to the cessation of feeling? And what is feeling’s gratification, drawback, and escape?”
- 1.5 “Mendicants, there are these three feelings. pleasant, painful, and neutral. These are called feeling.
- 1.8 Feeling originates from contact. Craving is the practice that leads to the origin of feeling.
- 1.10 When contact ceases, feeling ceases. ...
- 1.11 Removing and giving up desire and greed for feeling: this is its escape.”

SN 36.27

## Ascetics and Brahmins (1st)

*Paṭhamasamaṇabrāhmaṇasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, there are these three feelings. What three? Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling.

There are ascetics and brahmins who don't truly understand 1.4  
these three feelings' gratification, drawback, and escape. I don't  
deem them as true ascetics and brahmins. Those venerables don't  
realize the goal of life as an ascetic or brahmin, and don't live having  
realized it with their own insight.

There are ascetics and brahmins who do truly understand these 1.6  
three feelings' gratification, drawback, and escape. I deem them  
as true ascetics and brahmins. Those venerables realize the goal of  
life as an ascetic or brahmin, and live having realized it with their  
own insight."

SN 36.28

## Ascetics and Brahmins (2nd)

*Dutiyasamaṇabrāhmaṇasutta*

"Mendicants, there are these three feelings. What three? Pleasant, 1.1  
painful, and neutral feeling.

There are ascetics and brahmins who don't truly understand 1.4  
these three feelings' origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and  
escape. ...

There are ascetics and brahmins who do truly understand ..." 1.5

SN 36.29

## Ascetics and Brahmins (3rd)

*Tatīyasamaṇabrāhmaṇasutta*

"Mendicants, there are ascetics and brahmins who don't understand 1.1  
feeling, its origin, its cessation, and the practice that leads to its  
cessation. ...

There are ascetics and brahmins who do understand ..." 1.2

SN 36.30

## Plain Version

*Suddhikasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, there are these three feelings. What three? Pleasant, painful, and neutral feelings. These are the three feelings.”

SN 36.31

## Not of the Flesh

*Nirāmisasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, there is rapture of the flesh, rapture not of the flesh, and rapture even more spiritual than that not of the flesh.
- 1.2 There is pleasure of the flesh, pleasure not of the flesh, and pleasure even more spiritual than that not of the flesh.
- 1.3 There is equanimity of the flesh, equanimity not of the flesh, and equanimity even more spiritual than that not of the flesh.
- 1.4 There is liberation of the flesh, liberation not of the flesh, and liberation even more spiritual than that not of the flesh.
- 1.5 And what is rapture of the flesh? There are these five kinds of sensual stimulation. What five? Sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. Sounds ... Smells ... Tastes ... Touches known by the body that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. These are the five kinds of sensual stimulation. The rapture that arises from these five kinds of sensual stimulation is called rapture of the flesh.
- 2.1 And what is rapture not of the flesh? It’s when a mendicant, quite secluded from sensual pleasures, secluded from unskillful qualities, enters and remains in the first absorption, which has the rapture and bliss born of seclusion, while placing the mind and keeping it connected. As the placing of the mind and keeping it connected are stilled, they enter and remain in the second absorption, which has



the rapture and bliss born of immersion, with internal clarity and mind at one, without placing the mind and keeping it connected. This is called rapture not of the flesh.

And what is rapture even more spiritual than that not of the flesh? When a mendicant who has ended the defilements reviews their mind free from greed, hate, and delusion, rapture arises. This is called rapture even more spiritual than that not of the flesh. 3.1

And what is pleasure of the flesh? Mendicants, there are these five kinds of sensual stimulation. What five? Sights known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. Sounds ... Smells ... Tastes ... Touches known by the body that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. These are the five kinds of sensual stimulation. The pleasure and happiness that arise from these five kinds of sensual stimulation is called pleasure of the flesh. 4.1

And what is pleasure not of the flesh? It's when a mendicant, quite secluded from sensual pleasures, secluded from unskillful qualities, enters and remains in the first absorption, which has the rapture and bliss born of seclusion, while placing the mind and keeping it connected. As the placing of the mind and keeping it connected are stilled, they enter and remain in the second absorption, which has the rapture and bliss born of immersion, with internal clarity and mind at one, without placing the mind and keeping it connected. And with the fading away of rapture, they enter and remain in the third absorption, where they meditate with equanimity, mindful and aware, personally experiencing the bliss of which the noble ones declare, 'Equanimous and mindful, one meditates in bliss.' This is called pleasure not of the flesh. 5.1

And what is pleasure even more spiritual than that not of the flesh? When a mendicant who has ended the defilements reviews their mind free from greed, hate, and delusion, pleasure and happiness arises. This is called pleasure even more spiritual than that not of the flesh. 6.1

- 7.1 And what is equanimity of the flesh? There are these five kinds of sensual stimulation. What five? Sight known by the eye that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. Sounds ... Smells ... Tastes ... Touches known by the body that are likable, desirable, agreeable, pleasant, sensual, and arousing. These are the five kinds of sensual stimulation. The equanimity that arises from these five kinds of sensual stimulation is called equanimity of the flesh.
- 8.1 And what is equanimity not of the flesh? It's when, giving up pleasure and pain, and ending former happiness and sadness, a mendicant enters and remains in the fourth absorption, without pleasure or pain, with pure equanimity and mindfulness. This is called equanimity not of the flesh.
- 9.1 And what is equanimity even more spiritual than that not of the flesh? When a mendicant who has ended the defilements reviews their mind free from greed, hate, and delusion, equanimity arises. This is called equanimity even more spiritual than that not of the flesh.
- 10.1 And what is liberation of the flesh? Liberation connected with form is liberation of the flesh.
- 11.1 And what is liberation not of the flesh? Liberation connected with the formless is liberation not of the flesh.
- 12.1 And what is liberation even more spiritual than that not of the flesh? When a mendicant who has ended the defilements reviews their mind free from greed, hate, and delusion, liberation arises. This is called liberation even more spiritual than that not of the flesh."

**The Linked Discourses on feeling are complete.**

# LINKED DISCOURSES ON FEMALES

# First Chapter of Abbreviated Texts

SN 37.1

## A Female

*Mātugāmasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, when a female has five factors she is extremely undesirable to a man. What five? She’s not attractive, wealthy, or ethical; she’s idle, and she doesn’t beget children. When a female has these five factors she is extremely undesirable to a man.
- 1.5 When a female has five factors she is extremely desirable to a man. What five? She’s attractive, wealthy, and ethical; she’s deft and tireless, and she begets children. When a female has these five factors she is extremely desirable to a man.”

SN 37.2

## A Man

*Purisasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, when a man has five factors he is extremely undesirable to a female. What five? He’s not attractive, wealthy, or ethical; he’s idle, and he doesn’t beget children. When a man has these five factors he is extremely undesirable to a female.

When a man has five factors he is extremely desirable to a female. What five? He's attractive, wealthy, and ethical; he's deft and tireless, and he begets children. When a man has these five factors he is extremely desirable to a female." 1.5

SN 37.3

## Particular Suffering

*Āveṇikadukkhassutta*

"Mendicants, there are these five kinds of suffering that particularly apply to females. They're undergone by females and not by men. What five? 1.1

Firstly, a female, while still young, goes to live with her husband's family and is separated from her relatives. This is the first kind of suffering that particularly applies to females. 1.3

Furthermore, a female undergoes the menstrual cycle. This is the second kind of suffering that particularly applies to females. 1.5

Furthermore, a female undergoes pregnancy. This is the third kind of suffering that particularly applies to females. 1.7

Furthermore, a female gives birth. This is the fourth kind of suffering that particularly applies to females. 1.9

Furthermore, a female provides services for a man. This is the fifth kind of suffering that particularly applies to females. 1.11

These are the five kinds of suffering that particularly apply to females. They're undergone by females and not by men." 1.13

SN 37.4

## Three Qualities

*Tīhidhammehisutta*

"Mendicants, when females have three qualities, when their body breaks up, after death, they are mostly reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell. What three? 1.1

- 1.3 A female lives at home with a heart full of the stain of stinginess in the morning, jealousy in the afternoon, and sexual desire in the evening.
- 1.6 When females have these three qualities, when their body breaks up, after death, they are mostly reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell.”

SN 37.5

## Irritable

*Kodhanasutta*

- 1.1 Then Venerable Anuruddha went up to the Buddha, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.2 “Sometimes, sir, with my clairvoyance that’s purified and superhuman, I see that a female—when her body breaks up, after death—is reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell. How many qualities do females have so that they’re reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell?”
- 2.1 “Anuruddha, when females have five qualities, when their body breaks up, after death, they are reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell. What five?
- 2.3 They’re faithless, shameless, imprudent, irritable, and witless.
- 2.4 When females have these five qualities, when their body breaks up, after death, they are reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell.”

SN 37.6

## Hostility

*Upanāhīsutta*

- 1.1 “... They’re faithless, shameless, imprudent, hostile, and witless. ...”

SN 37.7

## Jealous

*Issukīsutta*

“... They’re faithless, shameless, imprudent, jealous, and witless. 1.1  
...”

SN 37.8

## Stingy

*Maccharīsutta*

“... They’re faithless, shameless, imprudent, stingy, and witless. ...” 1.1

SN 37.9

## Adultery

*Aticārīsutta*

“... They’re faithless, shameless, imprudent, adulterous, and witless. 1.1  
...”

SN 37.10

## Unethical

*Dussīlasutta*

“... They’re faithless, shameless, imprudent, unethical, and witless. 1.1  
...”

SN 37.11

## Unlearned

*Appassutasutta*

- 1.1 “... They’re faithless, shameless, imprudent, unlearned, and witless.  
...”

SN 37.12

## Lazy

*Kusītasutta*

- 1.1 “... They’re faithless, shameless, imprudent, lazy, and witless. ...”

SN 37.13

## Unmindful

*Muṭṭhassatisutta*

- 1.1 “... They’re faithless, shameless, imprudent, unmindful, and witless.  
...”

SN 37.14

## Five Threats

*Pañcaverasutta*

- 1.1 “Anuruddha, when females have five qualities, when their body breaks up, after death, they are reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell. What five? They kill living creatures, steal, commit sexual misconduct, lie, and consume alcoholic drinks that cause negligence. When females have these five qualities, when their body breaks up, after death, they are reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell.”



# Second Chapter of Abbreviated Texts

SN 37.15

Loving

*Akkodhanasutta*

Then Venerable Anuruddha went up to the Buddha ... and asked 1.1  
him, “Sometimes, sir, with my clairvoyance that’s purified and  
superhuman, I see that a female—when her body breaks up, after  
death—is reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm. How many  
qualities do females have so that they’re reborn in a good place, a  
heavenly realm?”

“Anuruddha, when females have five qualities, when their body 2.1  
breaks up, after death, they are reborn in a good place, a heavenly  
realm. What five? They’re faithful, conscientious, prudent, loving,  
and wise. When females have these five qualities, when their body  
breaks up, after death, they are reborn in a good place, a heavenly  
realm.”

SN 37.16

## Free of Hostility

*Anupanāhīsutta*

- 1.1 “... They’re faithful, conscientious, prudent, free of hostility, and wise. ...”

SN 37.17

## Free of Jealousy

*Anissukīsutta*

- 1.1 “... They’re faithful, conscientious, prudent, free of jealousy, and wise. ...”

SN 37.18

## Free of Stinginess

*Amaccharīsutta*

- 1.1 “... They’re faithful, conscientious, prudent, free of stinginess, and wise. ...”

SN 37.19

## Not Adulterous

*Anaticārīsutta*

- 1.1 “... They’re faithful, conscientious, prudent, not adulterous, and wise. ...”

SN 37.20

## Ethical

*Susīlasutta*

“... They’re faithful, conscientious, prudent, ethical, and wise. ...” 1.1

SN 37.21

## Very Learned

*Bahussutasutta*

“... They’re faithful, conscientious, prudent, learned, and wise. ...” 1.1

SN 37.22

## Energetic

*Āraddhavīriyasutta*

“... They’re faithful, conscientious, prudent, energetic, and wise. 1.1  
...”

SN 37.23

## Mindful

*Upaṭṭhitassatisutta*

“... They’re faithful, conscientious, prudent, mindful, and wise. ...” 1.1

SN 37.24

## Five Precepts

*Pañcasīlasutta*

“Anuruddha, when females have five qualities, when their body 1.1  
breaks up, after death, they are reborn in a good place, a heavenly

realm. What five? They don't kill living creatures, steal, commit sexual misconduct, lie, or consume alcoholic drinks that cause negligence. When females have these five qualities, when their body breaks up, after death, they are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm."

# The Chapter on Powers

SN 37.25

## Assured

*Visāradasutta*

“Mendicants, there are these five powers of a female. What five? 1.1  
Attractiveness, wealth, relatives, children, and ethical behavior.  
These are the five powers of a female. A female living at home with  
these five qualities is self-assured.”

SN 37.26

## Under Her Thumb

*Pasayhasutta*

“Mendicants, there are these five powers of a female. What five? 1.1  
Attractiveness, wealth, relatives, children, and ethical behavior.  
These are the five powers of a female. A female living at home with  
these five powers has her husband under her thumb.”

SN 37.27

## Mastered

*Abhibhuyyasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, there are these five powers of a female. What five? Attractiveness, wealth, relatives, children, and ethical behavior. These are the five powers of a female. A female living at home with these five powers has her husband under her mastery.”

SN 37.28

## One

*Ekasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, when a man has one power he has a female under his mastery. What one power? The power of authority. Mastered by this, a female’s powers of attractiveness, wealth, relatives, children, and ethical behavior do not avail her.”

SN 37.29

## In That Respect

*Angasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, there are these five powers of a female. What five?  
 1.3 Attractiveness, wealth, relatives, children, and ethical behavior.  
 1.4 A female who has the power of attractiveness but not the power of wealth is incomplete in that respect. But when she has the power of attractiveness and the power of wealth she’s complete in that respect.  
 1.8 A female who has the powers of attractiveness and wealth, but not the power of relatives is incomplete in that respect. But when she has the powers of attractiveness, wealth, and relatives she’s complete in that respect.

A female who has the powers of attractiveness, wealth, and relatives, but not the power of children is incomplete in that respect. But when she has the powers of attractiveness, wealth, relatives, and children she's complete in that respect. 1.12

A female who has the powers of attractiveness, wealth, relatives, and children, but not the power of ethical behavior is incomplete in that respect. But when she has the powers of attractiveness, wealth, relatives, children, and ethical behavior she's complete in that respect. 1.16

These are the five powers of a female." 1.20

SN 37.30

## They Send Her Away

*Nāsentisutta*

"Mendicants, there are these five powers of a female. What five? 1.1

Attractiveness, wealth, relatives, children, and ethical behavior. 1.3

If a female has the power of attractiveness but not that of ethical behavior, the family will send her away, they won't accommodate her. 1.4

If a female has the powers of attractiveness and wealth but not that of ethical behavior, the family will send her away, they won't accommodate her. 1.5

If a female has the powers of attractiveness, wealth, and relatives, but not that of ethical behavior, the family will send her away, they won't accommodate her. 1.6

If a female has the powers of attractiveness, wealth, relatives, and children, but not that of ethical behavior, the family will send her away, they won't accommodate her. 1.7

If a female has the power of ethical behavior but not that of attractiveness, the family will accommodate her, they won't send her away. 1.8

If a female has the power of ethical behavior but not that of wealth, the family will accommodate her, they won't send her away. 1.9

- 1.10 If a female has the power of ethical behavior but not that of relatives, the family will accommodate her, they won't send her away.
- 1.11 If a female has the power of ethical behavior but not that of children, the family will accommodate her, they won't send her away.
- 1.12 These are the five powers of a female."

SN 37.31

## Cause

*Hetusutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, there are these five powers of a female. What five? Attractiveness, wealth, relatives, children, and ethical behavior.
- 1.4 It is not because of the powers of attractiveness, wealth, relatives, or children that females, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm. It is because of the power of ethical behavior that females, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.
- 1.6 These are the five powers of a female."

SN 37.32

## Things

*Thānasutta*

- 1.1 "Mendicants, there are five things that are hard to get for females who have not made merit. What five?
- 1.3 'May I be born into a suitable family!' This is the first thing.
- 1.5 'Having been born in a suitable family, may I marry into a suitable family!' This is the second thing.
- 1.7 'Having been born in a suitable family and married into a suitable family, may I live at home without a co-wife!' This is the third thing.



‘Having been born in a suitable family, and married into a suitable family, and living at home without a co-wife, may I have children!’ This is the fourth thing. 1.9

‘Having been born in a suitable family, and married into a suitable family, and living at home without a co-wife, and having had children, may I master my husband!’ This is the fifth thing. 1.11

These are the five things that are hard to get for females who have not made merit. 1.13

There are five things that are easy to get for females who have made merit. What five? 2.1

‘May I be born into a suitable family!’ This is the first thing. 2.3

‘Having been born into a suitable family, may I marry into a suitable family!’ This is the second thing. 2.5

‘Having been born into a suitable family and married into a suitable family, may I live at home without a co-wife!’ This is the third thing. 2.7

‘Having been born into a suitable family, and married into a suitable family, and living at home without a co-wife, may I have children!’ This is the fourth thing. 2.9

‘Having been born into a suitable family, and married into a suitable family, and living at home without a co-wife, and having had children, may I master my husband!’ This is the fifth thing. 2.11

These are the five things that are easy to get for females who have made merit.” 2.13

SN 37.33

## Living With Self-Assurance

*Pañcasīlavīsāradasutta*

“Mendicants, a female living at home with five qualities is self-assured. What five? She doesn’t kill living creatures, steal, commit sexual misconduct, lie, or consume alcoholic drinks that cause negligence. A female living at home with these five qualities is self-assured.” 1.1

SN 37.34

## Growth

*Vaddhīsutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, a female noble disciple who grows in five ways grows nobly, taking on what is essential and excellent in this life. What five? She grows in faith, ethics, learning, generosity, and wisdom. A female noble disciple who grows in these five ways grows nobly, taking on what is essential and excellent in this life.
- 2.1       When she grows in faith and ethics,  
            wisdom, and both generosity and learning—  
            a virtuous laywoman such as she  
            takes on what is essential for herself in this life.”

**The Linked Discourses on females are complete.**

LINKED DISCOURSES  
WITH JAMBUKHĀDAKA

# The Chapter with Jambukhādaka

SN 38.1

## A Question About Extinguishment

*Nibbānapañhāsutta*

- 1.1 At one time Venerable Sāriputta was staying in the land of the Magadhans near the little village of Nālaka. Then the wanderer Jambukhādaka went up to Venerable Sāriputta and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side and said to Sāriputta:
- 2.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘extinguishment’. What is extinguishment?”
- 2.3 “Reverend, the ending of greed, hate, and delusion is called extinguishment.”
- 2.5 “But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for realizing this extinguishment?”
- 2.6 “There is, reverend.”
- 2.7 “Well, what is it?”
- 2.8 “It is simply this noble eightfold path, that is: right view, right thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort, right mindfulness, and right immersion. This is the path, the practice, for realizing this extinguishment.”
- 2.11 “Reverend, this is a fine path, a fine practice, for realizing this extinguishment. Just this much is enough to be diligent.”

SN 38.2

## A Question About Perfection

*Arahattapañhāsutta*

“Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘perfection.’ 1.1  
What is perfection?”

“Reverend, the ending of greed, hate, and delusion is called 1.3  
perfection.”

“But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for realizing this 1.5  
perfection?”

“There is, reverend.” 1.6

“Well, what is it?” 1.7

“It is simply this noble eightfold path, that is: right view, right 1.8  
thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort,  
right mindfulness, and right immersion. This is the path, the prac-  
tice, for realizing this perfection.”

“Reverend, this is a fine path, a fine practice, for realizing this 1.11  
perfection. Just this much is enough to be diligent.”

SN 38.3

## Principled Speech

*Dhammavādīpañhāsutta*

“Reverend Sāriputta, who in the world have principled speech? 1.1  
Who in the world practice well? Who are the Holy Ones in the  
world?”

“Reverend, those who teach principles for giving up greed, hate, 1.2  
and delusion have principled speech in the world. Those who  
practice for giving up greed, hate, and delusion are practicing well  
in the world. Those who have given up greed, hate, and delusion—  
so they’re cut off at the root, made like a palm stump, obliterated,  
and unable to arise in the future—are Holy Ones in the world.”

- 2.1 “But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for giving up that greed, hate, and delusion?”
- 2.2 “There is, reverend.”
- 2.3 “Well, what is it?”
- 2.4 “It is simply this noble eightfold path, that is: right view, right thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort, right mindfulness, and right immersion. This is the path, this is the practice for giving up that greed, hate, and delusion.”
- 2.7 “This is a fine path, a fine practice, for giving up greed, hate, and delusion. Just this much is enough to be diligent.”

SN 38.4

## What’s the Purpose

*Kimatthiyasutta*

- 1.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, what’s the purpose of leading the spiritual life under the ascetic Gotama?”
- 1.2 “The purpose of leading the spiritual life under the Buddha is to completely understand suffering.”
- 1.3 “But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for completely understanding this suffering?”
- 1.4 “There is.” ...

SN 38.5

## Solace

*Assāsapattasutta*

- 1.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘gaining solace’. At what point do you gain solace?”
- 1.3 “When a mendicant truly understands the six fields of contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape, at that point they’ve gained solace.”

“But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for realizing this solace?” 1.4

“There is.” ... 1.5

SN 38.6

## Ultimate Solace

*Paramassāsappattasutta*

“Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘gaining ultimate solace’. At what point do you gain ultimate solace?” 1.1

“When a mendicant is freed by not grasping after truly understanding the six fields of contact’s origin, ending, gratification, drawback, and escape, at that point they’ve gained ultimate solace.” 1.3

“But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for realizing this ultimate solace?” 1.4

“There is.” ... 1.5

SN 38.7

## A Question About Feeling

*Vedanāpañhāsutta*

“Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘feeling’. What is feeling?” 1.1

“Reverend, there are three feelings. What three? Pleasant, painful, and neutral feeling. These are the three feelings.” 1.3

“But reverend, is there a path and a practice for completely understanding these three feelings?” 1.7

“There is.” ... 1.8

SN 38.8

## A Question About Defilements

*Āsavapañhāsutta*

- 1.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘defilement’. What is defilement?”
- 1.3 “Reverend, there are three defilements. The defilements of sensuality, desire to be reborn, and ignorance. These are the three defilements.”
- 1.6 “But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for completely understanding these three defilements?”
- 1.7 “There is.” ...

SN 38.9

## A Question About Ignorance

*Avijjāpañhāsutta*

- 1.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘ignorance’. What is ignorance?”
- 1.3 “Not knowing about suffering, the origin of suffering, the cessation of suffering, and the practice that leads to the cessation of suffering. This is called ignorance.”
- 1.5 “But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for giving up that ignorance?”
- 1.6 “There is.” ...

SN 38.10

## A Question About Craving

*Taṇhāpañhāsutta*

- 1.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘craving’. What is craving?”



“Reverend, there are these three cravings. Craving for sensual pleasures, craving to continue existence, and craving to end existence. These are the three cravings.” 1.3

“But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for completely understanding these cravings?” 1.6

“There is.” ... 1.7

SN 38.11

## A Question About Floods

*Oghapañhāsutta*

“Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘a flood’. What is a flood?” 1.1

“Reverend, there are these four floods. The floods of sensuality, desire to be reborn, views, and ignorance. These are the four floods.” 1.3

“But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for completely understanding these floods?” 1.6

“There is.” ... 1.7

SN 38.12

## A Question About Grasping

*Upādānapañhāsutta*

“Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘grasping’. What is grasping?” 1.1

“Reverend, there are these four kinds of grasping. Grasping at sensual pleasures, views, precepts and observances, and theories of a self. These are the four kinds of grasping.” 1.3

“But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for completely understanding these four kinds of grasping?” 1.6

“There is.” ... 1.7

SN 38.13

## A Question About States of Existence

*Bhavapañhāsutta*

- 1.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of these things called ‘states of existence’. What are states of existence?”
- 1.3 “Reverend, there are these three states of existence. Existence in the sensual realm, the realm of luminous form, and the formless realm. These are the three states of existence.”
- 1.6 “But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for completely understanding these three states of existence?”
- 1.7 “There is.” ...

SN 38.14

## A Question About Suffering

*Dukkhapañhāsutta*

- 1.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘suffering’. What is suffering?”
- 1.3 “Reverend, there are these three forms of suffering. The suffering inherent in painful feeling; the suffering inherent in conditions; and the suffering inherent in perishing. These are the three forms of suffering.”
- 1.6 “But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for completely understanding these forms of suffering?”
- 1.7 “There is.” ...

SN 38.15

## A Question About Substantial Reality

*Sakkāyapañhāsutta*

- 1.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘substantial reality’. What is substantial reality?”

“Reverend, the Buddha said that these five grasping aggregates 1.3  
are substantial reality. That is, form, feeling, perception, choices,  
and consciousness. The Buddha said that these five grasping aggregates are substantial reality.”

“But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for completely 1.6  
understanding this substantial reality?”

“There is.” ... 1.7

SN 38.16

## A Question About What's Hard to Do

*Dukkarapañhāsutta*

“Reverend Sāriputta, in this teaching and training, what is hard to 1.1  
do?”

“Going forth, reverend, is hard to do in this teaching and train- 1.2  
ing.”

“But what's hard to do for someone who has gone forth?” 1.3

“When you've gone forth it's hard to be satisfied.” 1.4

“But what's hard to do for someone who is satisfied?” 1.5

“When you're satisfied, it's hard to practice in line with the teach- 1.6  
ing.”

“But if a mendicant practices in line with the teaching, will it 1.7  
take them long to become a perfected one?”

“Not long, reverend.” 1.8

**The Linked Discourses with Jambukhādaka are complete.**

LINKED DISCOURSES  
WITH SĀMAṆḌAKA

# The Chapter with Sāmaṇḍaka

SN 39.1–15

## With Sāmaṇḍaka on Extinguishment

*Sāmaṇḍakasutta*

At one time Venerable Sāriputta was staying in the land of the Vajjis 1.1  
near Ukkacelā on the bank of the Ganges river. Then the wanderer  
Sāmaṇḍaka went up to Venerable Sāriputta and exchanged greet-  
ings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were  
over, he sat down to one side and said to Sāriputta:

“Reverend Sāriputta, they speak of this thing called ‘extinguish- 2.1  
ment’. What is extinguishment?”

“Reverend, the ending of greed, hate, and delusion is called 2.3  
extinguishment.”

“But, reverend, is there a path and a practice for realizing this 2.5  
extinguishment?”

“There is, reverend.” 2.6

“Well, what is it?” 3.1

“It is simply this noble eightfold path, that is: right view, right 3.2  
thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort,  
right mindfulness, and right immersion. This is the path, the prac-  
tice, for realizing this extinguishment.”

“Reverend, this is a fine path, a fine practice, for realizing this 3.5  
extinguishment. Just this much is enough to be diligent.”

*(Tell in full as the Linked Discourses with Jambukhādaka.)*

SN 39.16

## Hard to Do

*Dukkarasutta*

- 1.1 “Reverend Sāriputta, in this teaching and training, what is hard to do?”
- 1.2 “Going forth, reverend, is hard to do in this teaching and training.”
- 1.3 “But what’s hard to do for someone who has gone forth?”
- 1.4 “When you’ve gone forth it’s hard to be satisfied.”
- 1.5 “But what’s hard to do for someone who is satisfied?”
- 1.6 “When you’re satisfied, it’s hard to practice in line with the teaching.”
- 1.7 “But if a mendicant practices in line with the teaching, will it take them long to become a perfected one?”
- 1.8 “Not long, reverend.”

**The Linked Discourses with Sāmaññaka are complete.**

LINKED DISCOURSES  
WITH MOGGALLĀNA

# The Chapter with Moggallāna

SN 40.1

## A Question About the First Absorption

*Paṭhamajhānapaṇhāsutta*

- 1.1 At one time Venerable Mahāmoggallāna was staying near Sāvatthī in Jeta’s Grove, Anāthapiṇḍika’s monastery. There Venerable Mahāmoggallāna addressed the mendicants: “Reverends, mendicants!”
- 1.4 “Reverend,” they replied. Venerable Mahāmoggallāna said this:
- 2.1 “Just now, reverends, as I was in private retreat this thought came to mind: ‘They speak of this thing called the “first absorption”. What is the first absorption?’ It occurred to me: ‘It’s when a mendicant, quite secluded from sensual pleasures, secluded from unskillful qualities, enters and remains in the first absorption, which has the rapture and bliss born of seclusion, while placing the mind and keeping it connected. This is called the first absorption.’
- 2.7 And so ... I was entering and remaining in the first absorption. While I was in that meditation, perceptions accompanied by sensual pleasures beset me due to loss of focus.
- 3.1 Then the Buddha came up to me with his psychic power and said, ‘Moggallāna, Moggallāna! Don’t neglect the first absorption, brahmin! Settle your mind in the first absorption; unify your mind and immerse it in the first absorption.’



And so, after some time . . . I entered and remained in the first 3.4  
absorption.

So if anyone should be rightly called a disciple who attained to 3.5  
great direct knowledge with help from the Teacher, it's me."

SN 40.2

## A Question About the Second Absorption

*Dutiyajhānapaṇhāsutta*

"They speak of this thing called the 'second absorption'. What is 1.1  
the second absorption? It occurred to me: 'As the placing of the  
mind and keeping it connected are stilled, a mendicant enters and  
remains in the second absorption, which has the rapture and bliss  
born of immersion, with internal clarity and mind at one, with-  
out placing the mind and keeping it connected. This is called the  
second absorption.'

And so . . . I was entering and remaining in the second absorp- 1.6  
tion. While I was in that meditation, perceptions accompanied by  
placing the mind beset me due to loss of focus.

Then the Buddha came up to me with his psychic power and said, 2.1  
'Moggallāna, Moggallāna! Don't neglect the second absorption,  
brahmin! Settle your mind in the second absorption; unify your  
mind and immerse it in the second absorption.'

And so, after some time . . . I entered and remained in the second 2.4  
absorption.

So if anyone should be rightly called a disciple who attained to 2.5  
great direct knowledge with help from the Teacher, it's me."

## SN 40.3

## A Question About the Third Absorption

*Tatīyajhānapanāṇhāsutta*

- 1.1 “They speak of this thing called the ‘third absorption.’ What is the third absorption? It occurred to me: ‘With the fading away of rapture, a mendicant enters and remains in the third absorption, where they meditate with equanimity, mindful and aware, personally experiencing the bliss of which the noble ones declare, “Equanimous and mindful, one meditates in bliss.” This is called the third absorption.’
- 1.6 And so ... I was entering and remaining in the third absorption. While I was in that meditation, perceptions accompanied by rapture beset me due to loss of focus.
- 2.1 Then the Buddha came up to me with his psychic power and said, ‘Moggallāna, Moggallāna! Don’t neglect the third absorption, brahmin! Settle your mind in the third absorption; unify your mind and immerse it in the third absorption.’
- 2.4 And so, after some time ... I entered and remained in the third absorption. So if anyone should be rightly called a disciple who attained to great direct knowledge with help from the Teacher, it’s me.”

## SN 40.4

## A Question About the Fourth Absorption

*Catutthajhānapanāṇhāsutta*

- 1.1 “They speak of this thing called the ‘fourth absorption.’ What is the fourth absorption? It occurred to me: ‘It’s when, giving up pleasure and pain, and ending former happiness and sadness, a mendicant enters and remains in the fourth absorption, without pleasure or pain, with pure equanimity and mindfulness. This is called the fourth absorption.’

And so ... I was entering and remaining in the fourth absorption. While I was in that meditation, perceptions accompanied by pleasure beset me due to loss of focus. 1.6

Then the Buddha came up to me with his psychic power and said, 2.1  
‘Moggallāna, Moggallāna! Don’t neglect the fourth absorption, brahmin! Settle your mind in the fourth absorption; unify your mind and immerse it in the fourth absorption.’

And so, after some time ... I entered and remained in the fourth absorption. 2.4

So if anyone should be rightly called a disciple who attained to 2.5  
great direct knowledge with help from the Teacher, it’s me.”

SN 40.5

## A Question About the Dimension of Infinite Space

*Ākāśānañcāyatanapañhāsutta*

“They speak of this thing called the ‘dimension of infinite space.’ 1.1  
What is the dimension of infinite space? It occurred to me: ‘It’s when a mendicant—going totally beyond perceptions of form, with the ending of perceptions of impingement, not focusing on perceptions of diversity—aware that “space is infinite”, enters and remains in the dimension of infinite space. This is called the dimension of infinite space.’

And so ... I was entering and remaining in the dimension of infinite space. While I was in that meditation, perceptions accompanied by forms beset me due to loss of focus. 1.6

Then the Buddha came up to me with his psychic power and 2.1  
said, ‘Moggallāna, Moggallāna! Don’t neglect the dimension of infinite space, brahmin! Settle your mind in the dimension of infinite space; unify your mind and immerse it in the dimension of infinite space.’

- 2.4 And so, after some time ... I entered and remained in the dimension of infinite space.
- 2.5 So if anyone should be rightly called a disciple who attained to great direct knowledge with help from the Teacher, it's me."

SN 40.6

## A Question About the Dimension of Infinite Consciousness

*Viññāṇañcāyatanapañhāsutta*

- 1.1 "They speak of this thing called the 'dimension of infinite consciousness'. What is the dimension of infinite consciousness? It occurred to me: 'It's when a mendicant, going totally beyond the dimension of infinite space, aware that "consciousness is infinite", enters and remains in the dimension of infinite consciousness. This is called the dimension of infinite consciousness.'
- 1.6 And so ... I was entering and remaining in the dimension of infinite consciousness. While I was in that meditation, perceptions accompanied by the dimension of infinite space beset me due to loss of focus.
- 2.1 Then the Buddha came up to me with his psychic power and said, 'Moggallāna, Moggallāna! Don't neglect the dimension of infinite consciousness, brahmin! Settle your mind in the dimension of infinite consciousness; unify your mind and immerse it in the dimension of infinite consciousness.'
- 2.4 And so, after some time ... I entered and remained in the dimension of infinite consciousness.
- 2.5 So if anyone should be rightly called a disciple who attained to great direct knowledge with help from the Teacher, it's me."

SN 40.7

## A Question About the Dimension of Nothingness

*Ākiñcaññāyatanapañhāsutta*

“They speak of this thing called the ‘dimension of nothingness.’ 1.1  
What is the dimension of nothingness? It occurred to me: ‘It’s when a mendicant, going totally beyond the dimension of infinite consciousness, aware that “there is nothing at all”, enters and remains in the dimension of nothingness. This is called the dimension of nothingness.’

And so ... I was entering and remaining in the dimension of 1.6  
nothingness. While I was in that meditation, perceptions accompanied by the dimension of infinite consciousness beset me due to loss of focus.

Then the Buddha came up to me with his psychic power and said, 2.1  
‘Moggallāna, Moggallāna! Don’t neglect the dimension of nothingness, brahmin! Settle your mind in the dimension of nothingness; unify your mind and immerse it in the dimension of nothingness.’

And so, after some time ... I entered and remained in the di- 2.4  
mension of nothingness.

So if anyone should be rightly called a disciple who attained to 2.5  
great direct knowledge with help from the Teacher, it’s me.”

SN 40.8

## A Question About the Dimension of Neither Perception Nor Non-Perception

*Nevasaññānāsaññāyatanapañhāsutta*

“They speak of this thing called the ‘dimension of neither percep- 1.1  
tion nor non-perception.’ What is the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception? It occurred to me: ‘It’s when a mendicant, going totally beyond the dimension of nothingness, en-

ters and remains in the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception. This is called the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception.’

- 1.6 And so ... I was entering and remaining in the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception. While I was in that meditation, perceptions accompanied by the dimension of nothingness beset me due to loss of focus.
- 2.1 Then the Buddha came up to me with his psychic power and said, ‘Moggallāna, Moggallāna! Don’t neglect the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception, brahmin! Settle your mind in the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception; unify your mind and immerse it in the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception.’
- 2.4 And so, after some time ... I entered and remained in the dimension of neither perception nor non-perception.
- 2.5 So if anyone should be rightly called a disciple who attained to great direct knowledge with help from the Teacher, it’s me.”

SN 40.9

## A Question About the Signless

*Animittapañhāsutta*

- 1.1 “They speak of this thing called the ‘signless immersion of the heart.’ What is the signless immersion of the heart? It occurred to me: ‘It’s when a mendicant, not focusing on any signs, enters and remains in the signless immersion of the heart. This is called the signless immersion of the heart.’
- 1.6 And so ... I was entering and remaining in the signless immersion of the heart. While I was in that meditation, my consciousness followed after signs.
- 2.1 Then the Buddha came up to me with his psychic power and said, ‘Moggallāna, Moggallāna! Don’t neglect the signless immersion of the heart, brahmin! Settle your mind in the signless immer-

sion of the heart; unify your mind and immerse it in the signless immersion of the heart.’

And so, after some time ... I entered and remained in the signless immersion of the heart. 2.4

So if anyone should be rightly called a disciple who attained to great direct knowledge with help from the Teacher, it’s me.” 2.5

SN 40.10

## With Sakka

*Sakkasutta*

And then Venerable Mahāmoggallāna, as easily as a strong person would extend or contract their arm, vanished from Jeta’s Grove and reappeared among the gods of the Thirty-Three. Then Sakka, lord of gods, with five hundred deities came up to Mahāmoggallāna, bowed, and stood to one side. Mahāmoggallāna said to him: 1.1

“Lord of gods, it’s good to go for refuge to the Buddha. It’s the reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm. It’s good to go for refuge to the teaching. It’s the reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm. It’s good to go for refuge to the Saṅgha. It’s the reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.” 2.1

“My good Moggallāna, it’s good to go for refuge to the Buddha ... the teaching ... the Saṅgha. It’s the reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.” 3.1

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with six hundred deities ... 4.1

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with seven hundred deities ... 4.2

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with eight hundred deities ... 4.3

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with eighty thousand deities ... 4.4

- 7.1 Then Sakka, lord of gods, with five hundred deities came up to Mahāmoggallāna, bowed, and stood to one side. Mahāmoggallāna said to him:
- 8.1 “Lord of gods, it’s good to have experiential confidence in the Buddha: ‘That Blessed One is perfected, a fully awakened Buddha, accomplished in knowledge and conduct, holy, knower of the world, supreme guide for those who wish to train, teacher of gods and humans, awakened, blessed.’ It’s the reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.
- 9.1 It’s good to have experiential confidence in the teaching: ‘The teaching is well explained by the Buddha—apparent in the present life, immediately effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can know it for themselves.’ It’s the reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.
- 10.1 It’s good to have experiential confidence in the Saṅgha: ‘The Saṅgha of the Buddha’s disciples is practicing the way that’s good, direct, systematic, and proper. It consists of the four pairs, the eight individuals. This is the Saṅgha of the Buddha’s disciples that is worthy of offerings dedicated to the gods, worthy of hospitality, worthy of a religious donation, worthy of greeting with joined palms, and is the supreme field of merit for the world.’ It’s the reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.
- 11.1 It’s good to have the ethical conduct that’s loved by the noble ones, unbroken, impeccable, spotless, and unmarred, liberating, praised by sensible people, not mistaken, and leading to immersion. It’s the reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.”
- 12.1 “My good Moggallāna, it’s good to have experiential confidence in the Buddha ... the teaching ... the Saṅgha ... and to have the ethical conduct that’s loved by the noble ones ... It’s the reason



why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.”

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with six hundred deities ... 16.1

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with seven hundred deities ... 16.2

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with eight hundred deities ... 16.3

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with eighty thousand deities ... 16.4

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with five hundred deities came up to 25.1  
Mahāmoggallāna, bowed, and stood to one side. Mahāmoggallāna said to him:

“Lord of gods, it’s good to go for refuge to the Buddha. It’s the 26.1  
reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm. They surpass other gods in ten respects: divine life span, beauty, happiness, glory, sovereignty, sights, sounds, smells, tastes, and touches.

It’s good to go for refuge to the teaching ... 27.1

It’s good to go for refuge to the Saṅgha. It’s the reason why some 28.1  
sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm. They surpass other gods in ten respects: divine life span, beauty, happiness, glory, sovereignty, sights, sounds, smells, tastes, and touches.”

“My good Moggallāna, it’s good to go for refuge to the Buddha 29.1  
...”

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with six hundred deities ... 32.1

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with seven hundred deities ... 32.2

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with eight hundred deities ... 32.3

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with eighty thousand deities ... 32.4

Then Sakka, lord of gods, with five hundred deities came up to 37.1  
Mahāmoggallāna, bowed, and stood to one side. Mahāmoggallāna said to him:

“Lord of gods, it’s good to have experiential confidence in the 38.1  
Buddha: ‘That Blessed One is perfected, a fully awakened Buddha ... teacher of gods and humans, awakened, blessed.’ It’s the reason why some sentient beings, when their body breaks up, after death, are reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm. They surpass other

gods in ten respects: divine life span, beauty, happiness, glory, sovereignty, sights, sounds, smells, tastes, and touches.

- 39.1 It's good to have experiential confidence in the teaching ...
- 40.1 It's good to have experiential confidence in the Saṅgha ...
- 41.1 It's good to have the ethical conduct that's loved by the noble ones ..."
- 42.1 "My good Moggallāna, it's good to have experiential confidence in the Buddha ..."
- 46.1 Then Sakka, lord of gods, with six hundred deities ...
- 46.2 Then Sakka, lord of gods, with seven hundred deities ...
- 46.3 Then Sakka, lord of gods, with eight hundred deities ...
- 46.4 Then Sakka, lord of gods, with eighty thousand deities ...

SN 40.11

## With Candana, Etc.

*Candanasutta*

- 1.1 Then the god Candana ...
  - 2.1 the god Suyāma ...
  - 3.1 the god Santusita ...
  - 4.1 the god Sunimmita ...
  - 5.1 the god Vasavatti ...
- (Tell in full as in the Discourse With Sakka.)

**The Linked Discourses on Moggallāna are complete.**

LINKED DISCOURSES WITH  
CITTA THE HOUSEHOLDER

# The Chapter with Citta

SN 41.1

## The Fetter

*Samyojanasutta*

- 1.1 At one time several senior mendicants were staying near Macchikāsaṇḍa in the Wild Mango Grove. Now at that time, after the meal, on return from almsround, several senior mendicants sat together in the pavilion and this discussion came up among them:
- 1.3 “Reverends, the ‘fetter’ and the ‘things prone to being fettered’: do these things differ in both meaning and phrasing? Or do they mean the same thing, and differ only in the phrasing?”
- 1.4 Some senior mendicants answered like this: “Reverends, the ‘fetter’ and the ‘things prone to being fettered’: these things differ in both meaning and phrasing.”
- 1.6 But some senior mendicants answered like this: “Reverends, the ‘fetter’ and the ‘things prone to being fettered’ mean the same thing; they differ only in the phrasing.”
- 2.1 Now at that time the householder Citta had arrived at Migapathaka on some business. He heard about what those senior mendicants were discussing.
- 3.1 So he went up to them, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to them, “Sirs, I heard that you were discussing whether the ‘fetter’ and the ‘things prone to being fettered’ differ in both meaning and phrasing, or whether they mean the same thing, and differ only in the phrasing.”

“That’s right, householder.” 3.7

“Sirs, the ‘fetter’ and the ‘things prone to being fettered’: these 4.1  
things differ in both meaning and phrasing.

Well then, sirs, I shall give you a simile. For by means of a simile 4.2  
some sensible people understand the meaning of what is said.

Suppose there was a black ox and a white ox yoked by a single 4.4  
harness or yoke. Would it be right to say that the black ox is the  
yoke of the white ox, or the white ox is the yoke of the black ox?”

“No, householder. The black ox is not the yoke of the white ox, 4.7  
nor is the white ox the yoke of the black ox. The yoke there is the  
single harness or yoke that they’re yoked by.”

“In the same way, the eye is not the fetter of sights, nor are sights 4.10  
the fetter of the eye. The fetter there is the desire and greed that  
arises from the pair of them.

The ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind is not the fetter of 4.12  
ideas, nor are ideas the fetter of the mind. The fetter there is the  
desire and greed that arises from the pair of them.”

“You’re fortunate, householder, so very fortunate, to traverse 4.19  
the Buddha’s deep teachings with the eye of wisdom.”

## SN 41.2

### Isidatta (1st)

#### *Paṭhamaisidattasutta*

At one time several senior mendicants were staying near Macchi- 1.1  
kāsaṇḍa in the Wild Mango Grove.

Then Citta the householder went up to them, bowed, sat down 1.2  
to one side, and said to them, “Honorable Seniors, please accept  
my offering of tomorrow’s meal.”

They consented with silence. Knowing that the senior men- 1.4  
dicants had consented, Citta got up from his seat, bowed, and  
respectfully circled them, keeping them on his right, before leav-  
ing.

- 1.6 Then when the night had passed, the senior mendicants robed up in the morning and, taking their bowls and robes, went to Citta's home, and sat down on the seats spread out.
- 2.1 Then Citta went up to them, bowed, sat down to one side, and asked the senior venerable, "Honorable Senior, they speak of 'the diversity of elements'. In what way did the Buddha speak of the diversity of elements?"
- 2.4 When he said this, the venerable senior kept silent.
- 2.5 For a second time ...
- 2.9 And for a third time, Citta asked him, "Honorable Senior, they speak of 'the diversity of elements'. In what way did the Buddha speak of the diversity of elements?"
- 2.12 And a second time and a third time the senior venerable kept silent.
- 3.1 Now at that time Venerable Isidatta was the most junior mendicant in that Saṅgha. He said to the senior venerable, "Honorable Senior, may I answer Citta's question?"
- 3.4 "Answer it, Reverend Isidatta."
- 3.5 "Householder, is this your question: 'They speak of "the diversity of elements". In what way did the Buddha speak of the diversity of elements?'"
- 3.8 "Yes, sir."
- 3.9 "This is the diversity of elements spoken of by the Buddha.
- 3.10 The eye element, the sights element, the eye consciousness element ...
- 3.11 The mind element, the idea element, the mind consciousness element.
- 3.12 This is how the Buddha spoke of the diversity of elements."
- 4.1 Then Citta, having approved and agreed with what Isidatta said, served and satisfied the senior mendicants with his own hands with delicious fresh and cooked foods. When the senior mendicants had eaten and washed their hands and bowls, they got up from their seats and left.

Then the senior venerable said to Venerable Isidatta, “Isidatta, 4.3  
it’s good that you felt inspired to answer that question, because  
I didn’t. So when a similar question comes up, you should also  
answer it as you feel inspired.”

SN 41.3

## With Isidatta (2nd)

*Dutiyaisidattasutta*

At one time several senior mendicants were staying near Macchi- 1.1  
kāsaṇḍa in the Wild Mango Grove.

Then Citta the householder went up to them, bowed, sat down 1.2  
to one side, and said to them, “Honorable Seniors, please accept  
my offering of tomorrow’s meal.”

They consented with silence. Then, knowing that the senior 1.4  
mendicants had consented, Citta got up from his seat, bowed, and  
respectfully circled them, keeping them on his right, before leaving.

Then when the night had passed, the senior mendicants robed 1.6  
up in the morning and, taking their bowls and robes, went to Citta’s  
home, and sat down on the seats spread out.

So he went up to them, bowed, sat down to one side, and said 2.1  
to the senior venerable:

“Honorable Senior, there are many different views that arise in 2.2  
the world. For example: the cosmos is eternal, or not eternal, or  
finite, or infinite; the soul and the body are the same thing, or they  
are different things; after death, a Realized One still exists, or no  
longer exists, or both still exists and no longer exists, or neither still  
exists nor no longer exists. And also the sixty-two misconceptions  
spoken of in “The Divine Net”. When what exists do these views  
come to be? When what doesn’t exist do these views not come to  
be?”

When he said this, the venerable senior kept silent. 3.1

For a second time . . . 3.2

And for a third time, Citta said to him: 3.3

3.4 “Honorable Senior, there are many different views that arise in the world. ... When what exists do these views come to be? When what doesn’t exist do these views not come to be?”

3.8 And a second time and a third time the senior venerable kept silent.

4.1 Now at that time Venerable Isidatta was the most junior mendicant in that Saṅgha. He said to the venerable senior, “Honorable Senior, may I answer Citta’s question?”

4.4 “Answer it, Reverend Isidatta.”

4.5 “Householder, is this your question: ‘There are many different views that arise in the world ... When what exists do these views come to be? When what doesn’t exist do these views not come to be?’” “Yes, sir.”

4.10 “Householder, there are many different views that arise in the world. For example: the cosmos is eternal, or not eternal, or finite, or infinite; the soul and the body are the same thing, or they are different things; after death, a Realized One still exists, or no longer exists, or both still exists and no longer exists, or neither still exists nor no longer exists. And also the sixty-two misconceptions spoken of in “The Divine Net”.

4.13 These views come to be when substantialist view exists. When substantialist view does not exist they do not come to be.”

5.1 “But sir, how does substantialist view come about?”

5.2 “It’s when an unlearned ordinary person has not seen the noble ones, and is neither skilled nor trained in the teaching of the noble ones. They’ve not seen true persons, and are neither skilled nor trained in the teaching of the true persons.

5.3 They regard form as self, self as having form, form in self, or self in form. They regard feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness as self, self as having consciousness, consciousness in self, or self in consciousness.

5.8 That’s how substantialist view comes about.”

6.1 “But sir, how does substantialist view not come about?”



“It’s when a learned noble disciple has seen the noble ones, and is skilled and trained in the teaching of the noble ones. They’ve seen true persons, and are skilled and trained in the teaching of the true persons. 6.2

They don’t regard form as self, self as having form, form in self, or self in form. They don’t regard feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness as self, self as having consciousness, consciousness in self, or self in consciousness. 6.3

That’s how substantialist view does not come about.” 6.8

“Sir, where has Venerable Isidatta come from?” 7.1

“I come from Avanti, householder.” 7.2

“Sir, there’s a friend of mine called Isidatta who I’ve never met. He’s gone forth from a good family in Avanti. Have you met him?” 7.3

“Yes, householder.” 7.5

“Sir, where is that venerable now staying?” When he said this, Isidatta kept silent. 7.6

“Sir, are you that Isidatta?” 7.8

“Yes, householder.” 7.9

“Sir, I hope Venerable Isidatta is happy here in Macchikāsaṇḍa, for the Wild Mango Grove is lovely. I’ll make sure that Venerable Isidatta is provided with robes, almsfood, lodgings, and medicines and supplies for the sick.” 7.10

“That’s nice of you to say, householder.” 7.13

Then Citta, having approved and agreed with what Isidatta said, served and satisfied the senior mendicants with his own hands with delicious fresh and cooked foods. When the senior mendicants had eaten and washed their hands and bowls, they got up from their seats and left. 8.1

Then the venerable senior said to Venerable Isidatta, “Isidatta, it’s good that you felt inspired to answer that question, because I didn’t. So when a similar question comes up, you should also answer it as you feel inspired.” 8.3

But Isidatta set his lodgings in order and, taking his bowl and robe, left Macchikāsaṇḍa, never to return. 8.7

SN 41.4

## Mahaka's Demonstration

*Mahakapāṭihāriyasutta*

- 1.1 At one time several senior mendicants were staying near Macchikāsaṇḍa in the Wild Mango Grove.
- 1.2 Then Citta the householder went up to them, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to them, “Honorable Seniors, please accept my offering of tomorrow’s meal in my barn.”
- 1.4 They consented with silence. Then, knowing that the senior mendicants had consented, Citta got up from his seat, bowed, and respectfully circled them, keeping them on his right, before leaving.
- 1.6 Then when the night had passed, the senior mendicants robed up in the morning and, taking their bowls and robes, went to Citta’s barn, and sat down on the seats spread out.
- 2.1 Then Citta served and satisfied the senior mendicants with his own hands with delicious milk-rice made with ghee. When the senior mendicants had eaten and washed their hands and bowls, they got up from their seats and left. Citta instructed that the remainder of the food be distributed, then followed behind the senior mendicants.
- 2.4 Now at that time the heat was sweltering. And those senior mendicants walked along as if their bodies were melting, as happens after a meal.
- 3.1 Now at that time Venerable Mahaka was the most junior mendicant in that Saṅgha. Then Venerable Mahaka said to the senior venerable, “Wouldn’t it be nice, Honorable Senior, if a cool wind blew, a cloud canopy formed, and a gentle rain drizzled down?”
- 4.1 “It would indeed be nice, Reverend Mahaka.” Then Mahaka used his psychic power to will that a cool wind would blow, a cloud canopy would form, and a gentle rain would drizzle down.
- 4.3 Then Citta thought, “The most junior mendicant in this Saṅgha has such psychic power!”

When they reached the monastery, Mahaka said to the senior 4.5  
venerable, “Honorable Senior, is that sufficient?”

“That’s sufficient, Reverend Mahaka, you’ve done enough and of- 4.7  
fered enough.” Then the senior mendicants entered their dwellings,  
and Mahaka entered his own dwelling.

Then Citta went up to Mahaka, bowed, sat down to one side, 5.1  
and said to him, “Sir, please show me a superhuman demonstration  
of psychic power.”

“Well, then, householder, place your upper robe on the porch 5.3  
and spread a handful of grass on it.”

“Yes, sir,” replied Citta, and did as he was asked. 5.4

Mahaka entered his dwelling and latched the door. Then he 5.5  
used his psychic power to will that a flame shoot out through the  
keyhole and the chink in the door, and it burned up the grass but  
not the upper robe. Then Citta shook out his upper robe and stood  
to one side, shocked and awestruck.

Mahaka left his dwelling and said to Citta, “Is that sufficient, 5.7  
householder?”

“That’s sufficient, sir, you’ve done enough and offered enough. I 6.1  
hope Venerable Mahaka is happy here in Macchikāsaṇḍa, for the  
Wild Mango Grove is lovely. I’ll make sure that Venerable Mahaka  
is provided with robes, almsfood, lodgings, and medicines and  
supplies for the sick.”

“That’s nice of you to say, householder.” 6.7

But Mahaka set his lodgings in order and, taking his bowl and 6.8  
robe, left Macchikāsaṇḍa, never to return.

SN 41.5

## With Kāmabhū (1st)

*Paṭhamakāmabhūsutta*

At one time Venerable Kāmabhū was staying near Macchikāsaṇḍa 1.1  
in the Wild Mango Grove.

1.2 Then Citta the householder went up to Venerable Kāmabhū, bowed, and sat down to one side. Kāmabhū said to him, “Householder, there is this saying:

3.1 ‘With flawless wheel and white canopy,  
the one-spoke chariot rolls on.  
See it come, untroubled,  
with stream cut, unbound.’

4.1 How should we see the detailed meaning of this brief statement?”

4.2 “Sir, was this spoken by the Buddha?”

4.3 “Yes, householder.”

4.4 “Well then, sir, please wait a moment while I consider the meaning of this.” Then after a short silence Citta said to Kāmabhū:

5.1 “Sir, ‘flawless wheel’ is a term for ethics.

5.2 ‘White canopy’ is a term for freedom.

5.3 ‘One spoke’ is a term for mindfulness.

5.4 ‘Rolls on’ is a term for going forward and coming back.

5.5 ‘Chariot’ is a term for this body made up of the four primary elements, produced by mother and father, built up from rice and porridge, liable to impermanence, to wearing away and erosion, to breaking up and destruction.

5.6 Greed, hate, and delusion are troubles. A mendicant who has ended the defilements has given these up, cut them off at the root, made them like a palm stump, and obliterated them, so they are unable to arise in the future. That’s why a mendicant who has ended the defilements is called ‘untroubled’.

5.9 ‘The one who comes’ is a term for the perfected one.

5.10 ‘Stream’ is a term for craving. A mendicant who has ended the defilements has given this up, cut it off at the root, made it like a palm stump, and obliterated it, so it’s unable to arise in the future. That’s why a mendicant who has ended the defilements is said to have ‘cut the stream’.

5.13 Greed, hate, and delusion are bonds. A mendicant who has ended the defilements has given these up, cut them off at the root,

made them like a palm stump, and obliterated them, so they are unable to arise in the future. That's why a mendicant who has ended the defilements is called 'unbound'.

So, sir, that's how I understand the detailed meaning of what the Buddha said in brief: 5.16

'With flawless wheel and white canopy, 6.1  
the one-spoke chariot rolls on.  
See it come, untroubled,  
with stream cut, unbound.'

"You're fortunate, householder, so very fortunate, to traverse 7.2  
the Buddha's deep teachings with the eye of wisdom."

SN 41.6

## With Kāmabhū (2nd)

*Dutiyakāmabhūsutta*

At one time Venerable Kāmabhū was staying near Macchikāsaṇḍa 1.1  
in the Wild Mango Grove. Then Citta the householder went up to  
Venerable Kāmabhū, sat down to one side, and said to him:

"Sir, how many processes are there?" 1.3

"Householder, there are three processes. Physical, verbal, and 1.4  
mental processes."

Saying "Good, sir," Citta approved and agreed with what Kā- 1.6  
mabhū said. Then he asked another question:

"But sir, what is the physical process? What's the verbal process? 1.7  
What's the mental process?"

"Breathing is a physical process. Placing the mind and keeping it 1.8  
connected are verbal processes. Perception and feeling are mental  
processes."

Saying "Good, sir," he asked another question: 2.1

"But sir, why is breathing a physical process? Why are placing 2.2  
the mind and keeping it connected verbal processes? Why are  
perception and feeling mental processes?"

- 2.3 “Breathing is physical. It’s tied up with the body, that’s why breathing is a physical process. First you place the mind and keep it connected, then you break into speech. That’s why placing the mind and keeping it connected are verbal processes. Perception and feeling are mental. They’re tied up with the mind, that’s why perception and feeling are mental processes.”
- 3.1 Saying “Good, sir,” he asked another question:
- 3.2 “But sir, how does someone attain the cessation of perception and feeling?”
- 3.3 “A mendicant who is entering such an attainment does not think: ‘I will enter the cessation of perception and feeling’ or ‘I am entering the cessation of perception and feeling’ or ‘I have entered the cessation of perception and feeling.’ Rather, their mind has been previously developed so as to lead to such a state.”
- 4.1 Saying “Good, sir,” he asked another question:
- 4.2 “But sir, which cease first for a mendicant who is entering the cessation of perception and feeling: physical, verbal, or mental processes?”
- 4.3 “Verbal processes cease first, then physical, then mental.”
- 5.1 Saying “Good, sir,” he asked another question:
- 5.2 “What’s the difference between someone who has passed away and a mendicant who has attained the cessation of perception and feeling?”
- 5.3 “When someone dies, their physical, verbal, and mental processes have ceased and stilled; their vitality is spent; their warmth is dissipated; and their faculties have disintegrated. When a mendicant has attained the cessation of perception and feeling, their physical, verbal, and mental processes have ceased and stilled. But their vitality is not spent; their warmth is not dissipated; and their faculties are very clear. That’s the difference between someone who has passed away and a mendicant who has attained the cessation of perception and feeling.”
- 6.1 Saying “Good, sir,” he asked another question:

“But sir, how does someone emerge from the cessation of perception and feeling?” 6.2

“A mendicant who is emerging from such an attainment does not think: ‘I will emerge from the cessation of perception and feeling’ or ‘I am emerging from the cessation of perception and feeling’ or ‘I have emerged from the cessation of perception and feeling.’ Rather, their mind has been previously developed so as to lead to such a state.” 6.3

Saying “Good, sir,” he asked another question: 7.1

“But sir, which arise first for a mendicant who is emerging from the cessation of perception and feeling: physical, verbal, or mental processes?” 7.2

“Mental processes arise first, then physical, then verbal.” 7.3

Saying “Good, sir,” he asked another question: 8.1

“But sir, when a mendicant has emerged from the attainment of the cessation of perception and feeling, how many kinds of contact do they experience?” 8.2

“They experience three kinds of contact: emptiness, signless, and undirected contacts.” 8.3

Saying “Good, sir,” he asked another question: 9.1

“But sir, when a mendicant has emerged from the attainment of the cessation of perception and feeling, what does their mind slant, slope, and incline to?” 9.2

“Their mind slants, slopes, and inclines to seclusion.” 9.3

Saying “Good, sir,” Citta approved and agreed with what Kāmabhū said. Then he asked another question: 10.1

“But sir, how many things are helpful for attaining the cessation of perception and feeling?” 10.2

“Well, householder, you’ve finally asked what you should have asked first! Nevertheless, I will answer you. Two things are helpful for attaining the cessation of perception and feeling: serenity and discernment.” 10.3

SN 41.7

## With Godatta

*Godattasutta*

1.1 At one time Venerable Godatta was staying near Macchikāsaṇḍa in the Wild Mango Grove. Then Citta the householder went up to Venerable Godatta, bowed, and sat down to one side. Godatta said to him:

1.3 “Householder, the limitless release of the heart, and the release of the heart through nothingness, and the release of the heart through emptiness, and the signless release of the heart: do these things differ in both meaning and phrasing? Or do they mean the same thing, and differ only in the phrasing?”

1.4 “Sir, there is a way in which these things differ in both meaning and phrasing. But there’s also a way in which they mean the same thing, and differ only in the phrasing.

2.1 And what’s the way in which these things differ in both meaning and phrasing?

2.2 It’s when a mendicant meditates spreading a heart full of love to one direction, and to the second, and to the third, and to the fourth. In the same way above, below, across, everywhere, all around, they spread a heart full of love to the whole world—abundant, expansive, limitless, free of enmity and ill will. They meditate spreading a heart full of compassion ... They meditate spreading a heart full of rejoicing ... They meditate spreading a heart full of equanimity to one direction, and to the second, and to the third, and to the fourth. In the same way above, below, across, everywhere, all around, they spread a heart full of equanimity to the whole world—abundant, expansive, limitless, free of enmity and ill will. This is called the limitless release of the heart.

3.1 And what is the release of the heart through nothingness? It’s when a mendicant, going totally beyond the dimension of infinite consciousness, aware that ‘there is nothing at all’, enters and re-



mains in the dimension of nothingness. This is called the release of the heart through nothingness.

And what is the release of the heart through emptiness? It's 4.1  
when a mendicant has gone to a wilderness, or to the root of a tree, or to an empty hut, and reflects like this: 'This is empty of a self or what belongs to a self.' This is called the release of the heart through emptiness.

And what is the signless heart's release? It's when a mendicant, 5.1  
not focusing on any signs, enters and remains in the signless immersion of the heart. This is called the signless release of the heart.

This is the way in which these things differ in both meaning and 5.4  
phrasing.

And what's the way in which they mean the same thing, and 6.1  
differ only in the phrasing?

Greed, hate, and delusion are makers of limits. A mendicant 6.2  
who has ended the defilements has given these up, cut them off at the root, made them like a palm stump, and obliterated them, so they are unable to arise in the future. The unshakable release of the heart is said to be the best kind of limitless release of the heart. That unshakable release of the heart is empty of greed, hate, and delusion.

Greed is something, hate is something, and delusion is some- 6.6  
thing. A mendicant who has ended the defilements has given these up, cut them off at the root, made them like a palm stump, and obliterated them, so they are unable to arise in the future. The unshakable release of the heart is said to be the best kind of release of the heart through nothingness. That unshakable release of the heart is empty of greed, hate, and delusion.

Greed, hate, and delusion are makers of signs. A mendicant 6.10  
who has ended the defilements has given these up, cut them off at the root, made them like a palm stump, and obliterated them, so they are unable to arise in the future. The unshakable release of the heart is said to be the best kind of signless release of the heart.

That unshakable release of the heart is empty of greed, hate, and delusion.

- 6.14 This is the way in which they mean the same thing, and differ only in the phrasing.”
- 6.15 “You’re fortunate, householder, so very fortunate, to traverse the Buddha’s deep teachings with the eye of wisdom.”

SN 41.8

## The Jain Ascetic of the Ñātika Clan

*Nigaṇṭhanāṭaputtasutta*

- 1.1 Now at that time the Jain ascetic of the Ñātika clan had arrived at Macchikāsaṇḍa together with a large assembly of Jain ascetics.
- 1.2 Citta the householder heard that they had arrived. Together with several lay followers, he went up to the Jain Ñātika and exchanged greetings with him.
- 1.4 When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side. The Jain Ñātika said to him, “Householder, do you have faith in the ascetic Gotama’s claim that there is a state of immersion without placing the mind and keeping it connected; that there is the cessation of placing the mind and keeping it connected?”
- 2.1 “Sir, in this case I don’t rely on faith in the Buddha’s claim that there is a state of immersion without placing the mind and keeping it connected; that there is the cessation of placing the mind and keeping it connected.”
- 2.3 When he said this, the Jain Ñātika looked up at his assembly and said, “See, good sirs, how straightforward this householder Citta is! He’s not devious or deceitful at all. To imagine that you can stop placing the mind and keeping it connected would be like imagining that you can catch the wind in a net, or dam the Ganges river with your own hand.”
- 3.1 “What do you think, sir? Which is better—knowledge or faith?”
- 3.3 “Knowledge is definitely better than faith, householder.”

“Well sir, whenever I want, quite secluded from sensual pleasures, secluded from unskillful qualities, I enter and remain in the first absorption, which has the rapture and bliss born of seclusion, while placing the mind and keeping it connected. And whenever I want, as the placing of the mind and keeping it connected are stilled ... I enter and remain in the second absorption. And whenever I want, with the fading away of rapture ... I enter and remain in the third absorption. And whenever I want, giving up pleasure and pain ... I enter and remain in the fourth absorption. 3.4

And so, sir, since I know and see like this, why should I rely on faith in another ascetic or brahmin who claims that there is a state of immersion without placing the mind and keeping it connected; that there is the cessation of placing the mind and keeping it connected?” 3.8

When he said this, the Jain Ñātika looked askance at his own assembly and said, “See, good sirs, how crooked this householder Citta is! He’s so devious and deceitful!” 4.1

“Sir, just now I understood you to say: ‘See, good sirs, how straightforward this householder Citta is! He’s not devious or deceitful at all.’ But then I understood you to say: ‘See, good sirs, how crooked this householder Citta is! He’s so devious and deceitful!’ If your first statement is true, the second is wrong. If your first statement is wrong, the second is true. 5.1

And also, sir, these ten legitimate questions are relevant. When you understand what they mean, then, together with your assembly of Jain ascetics, you can rebut me. ‘One thing: question, summary, and answer. Two ... three ... four ... five ... six ... seven ... eight ... nine ... ten things: question, summary, and answer.’” 5.7

Then Citta got up from his seat and left without asking the Jain Ñātika these ten legitimate questions. 5.19

SN 41.9

## With Kassapa, the Naked Ascetic

*Acelakassapasutta*

1.1 Now at that time the naked ascetic Kassapa, an old friend of Citta in the lay life, had arrived at Macchikāsaṇḍa.

1.2 Citta the householder heard that he had arrived. So he went up to him, and they exchanged greetings.

1.4 When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side and said to the naked ascetic Kassapa, “Honorable Kassapa, how long has it been since you went forth?”

1.6 “It’s been thirty years, householder.”

1.7 “But sir, in these thirty years have you achieved any superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones, a meditation at ease?”

1.8 “I have no such achievement, householder, only nakedness, baldness, and pokes in the buttocks.”

1.9 Citta said to him, “Oh, how incredible, how amazing, how well explained the teaching is. For in thirty years you have achieved no superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones, no meditation at ease, only nakedness, baldness, and pokes in the buttocks.”

2.1 “But householder, how long have you been a lay follower?”

2.2 “It’s been thirty years, sir.”

2.3 “But householder, in these thirty years have you achieved any superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones, a meditation at ease?”

2.4 “How, sir, could I not? For whenever I want, quite secluded from sensual pleasures, secluded from unskillful qualities, I enter and remain in the first absorption, which has the rapture and bliss born of seclusion, while placing the mind and keeping it connected. And whenever I want, as the placing of the mind and keeping it connected are stilled . . . I enter and remain in the second absorption. And whenever I want, with the fading away of rapture . . . I

enter and remain in the third absorption. And whenever I want, giving up pleasure and pain ... I enter and remain in the fourth absorption.

If I pass away before the Buddha, it wouldn't be surprising if the Buddha declares of me: "The householder Citta is bound by no fetter that might return him to this world." 2.9

When this was said, Kassapa said to Citta, "Oh, how incredible, how amazing, how well explained the teaching is. For a white-clothed layperson can achieve such a superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones, a meditation at ease. Householder, may I receive the going forth, the ordination in this teaching and training?" 2.11

Then Citta the householder took the naked ascetic Kassapa to see the senior mendicants, and said to them: 3.1

"Sirs, this is the naked ascetic Kassapa, who in lay life was an old friend of mine. May the senior monks give him the going forth, the ordination. I'll make sure that he's provided with robes, almsfood, lodgings, and medicines and supplies for the sick." 3.2

And the naked ascetic Kassapa received the going forth, the ordination in this teaching and training. Not long after his ordination, Venerable Kassapa, living alone, withdrawn, diligent, keen, and resolute, soon realized the supreme end of the spiritual path in this very life. He lived having achieved with his own insight the goal for which gentlemen rightly go forth from the lay life to homelessness. 3.5

He understood: "Rebirth is ended; the spiritual journey has been completed; what had to be done has been done; there is no return to any state of existence." And Venerable Kassapa became one of the perfected. 3.7

SN 41.10

## Seeing the Sick

*Gilānadassanasutta*

- 1.1 Now at that time the householder Citta was sick, suffering, gravely ill.
- 1.2 Then several deities of the parks, forests, trees, and those who haunt the herbs, grass, and big trees came together and said to Citta, “Householder, make a wish to become a wheel-turning monarch in the future!”
- 2.1 When they said this, Citta said to them, “That too is impermanent! That too will pass! That too will be left behind!”
- 2.3 When he said this, his friends and colleagues, relatives and family members said, “Be mindful, master! Don’t babble.”
- 2.5 “What have I said that makes you say that?”
- 2.7 “It’s because you said: ‘That too is impermanent! That too will pass! That too will be left behind!’”
- 2.9 “Oh, well, that’s because the deities of the parks, forests, trees, and those who haunt the herbs, grass, and big trees said to me: ‘Householder, make a wish to become a wheel-turning monarch in the future!’ So I said to them: ‘That too is impermanent! That too will pass! That too will be left behind!’”
- 2.13 “But what reason do they see for saying that to you?”
- 2.15 “They think: ‘This householder Citta is ethical, of good character. If he makes a wish to become a wheel-turning monarch in the future, his heart’s wish will succeed because of the purity of his ethics. And then as a proper, principled king he will provide proper spirit-offerings.’ That’s the reason they see for saying to me: ‘Householder, make a wish to become a wheel-turning monarch in the future!’ So I said to them: ‘That too is impermanent! That too will pass! That too will be left behind!’”
- 3.1 “Then, master, advise us!”
- 3.2 “So you should train like this:

We will have experiential confidence in the Buddha: ‘That 3.3  
Blessed One is perfected, a fully awakened Buddha, accomplished  
in knowledge and conduct, holy, knower of the world, supreme  
guide for those who wish to train, teacher of gods and humans,  
awakened, blessed.’

We will have experiential confidence in the teaching: ‘The teach- 3.5  
ing is well explained by the Buddha—apparent in the present life,  
immediately effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible  
people can know it for themselves.’

We will have experiential confidence in the Saṅgha: ‘The Saṅgha 3.7  
of the Buddha’s disciples is practicing the way that’s good, direct,  
systematic, and proper. It consists of the four pairs, the eight indi-  
viduals. This is the Saṅgha of the Buddha’s disciples that is worthy  
of offerings dedicated to the gods, worthy of hospitality, worthy of  
a religious donation, worthy of greeting with joined palms, and is  
the supreme field of merit for the world.’

And we will share without reservation all the gifts available to 3.9  
give in our family with those who are ethical and of good character.”

Then, after Citta had encouraged his friends and colleagues, 3.10  
relatives and family members in the Buddha, the teaching, the  
Saṅgha, and generosity, he passed away.

**The Linked Discourses on Citta  
the Householder are complete.**

LINKED DISCOURSES  
WITH CHIEFS



# The Chapter on Chiefs

SN 42.1

## Vicious

*Caṇḍasutta*

At Sāvattthī.

1.1

Then the chief named Fury went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat  
down to one side, and said to him: 1.2

“What is the cause, sir, what is the reason why some people are  
regarded as furious, while others are regarded as sweet-natured?” 1.3

“Take someone who hasn’t given up greed. So they get annoyed  
by others, and they show it. They’re regarded as furious. They  
haven’t given up hate. So they get annoyed by others, and they show  
it. They’re regarded as furious. They haven’t given up delusion. So  
they get annoyed by others, and they show it. They’re regarded as  
furious. This is the cause, this is the reason why some people are  
regarded as furious. 1.5

But take someone who has given up greed. So they don’t get  
annoyed by others, and don’t show it. They’re regarded as sweet-  
natured. They’ve given up hate. So they don’t get annoyed by oth-  
ers, and don’t show it. They’re regarded as sweet-natured. They’ve  
given up delusion. So they don’t get annoyed by others, and don’t  
show it. They’re regarded as sweet-natured. This is the cause, this  
is the reason why some people are regarded as sweet-natured.” 2.1

When he said this, the chief named Fury said to the Buddha, 3.1  
“Excellent, sir! Excellent! As if he were righting the overturned,

or revealing the hidden, or pointing out the path to the lost, or lighting a lamp in the dark so people with clear eyes can see what's there, the Buddha has made the teaching clear in many ways. I go for refuge to the Buddha, to the teaching, and to the mendicant Saṅgha. From this day forth, may the Buddha remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life."

SN 42.2

## With Tālapuṭa

*Tālapuṭasutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha, in the Bamboo Grove, the squirrels' feeding ground. Then Tālapuṭa the dancing master came up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to the Buddha:
- 1.3 "Sir, I have heard that the dancers of the past who were teachers of teachers said: 'Suppose a dancer entertains and amuses people on a stage or at a festival with truth and lies. When their body breaks up, after death, they're reborn in the company of laughing gods.' What does the Buddha say about this?"
- 1.6 "Enough, chief, let it be. Don't ask me that."
- 1.7 For a second time ...
- 1.12 And for a third time Tālapuṭa said to the Buddha:
- 1.13 "Sir, I have heard that the dancers of the past who were teachers of teachers said: 'Suppose a dancer entertains and amuses people on a stage or at a festival with truth and lies. When their body breaks up, after death, they're reborn in the company of laughing gods.' What does the Buddha say about this?"
- 2.1 "Clearly, chief, I'm not getting through to you when I say: 'Enough, chief, let it be. Don't ask me that.' Nevertheless, I will answer you.
- 2.5 When sentient beings are still not free of greed, and are still bound by greed, a dancer in a stage or festival presents them with even more arousing things. When sentient beings are still not free

of hate, and are still bound by hate, a dancer in a stage or festival presents them with even more hateful things. When sentient beings are still not free of delusion, and are still bound by delusion, a dancer in a stage or festival presents them with even more delusory things. And so, being heedless and negligent themselves, they've encouraged others to be heedless and negligent. When their body breaks up, after death, they're reborn in the hell called 'Laughter'.

But if you have such a view: 'Suppose a dancer entertains and amuses people on a stage or at a festival with truth and lies. When their body breaks up, after death, they're reborn in the company of laughing gods.' This is your wrong view. An individual with wrong view is reborn in one of two places, I say: hell or the animal realm." 2.12

When he said this, Tālapuṭa cried and burst out in tears. 3.1

"This is what I didn't get through to you when I said: 'Enough, chief, let it be. Don't ask me that.'" 3.2

"Sir, I'm not crying because of what the Buddha said. But sir, for a long time I've been cheated, tricked, and deceived by the dancers of the past who were teachers of teachers, who said: 'Suppose a dancer entertains and amuses people on a stage or at a festival with truth and lies. When their body breaks up, after death, they're reborn in the company of laughing gods.'" 3.4

Excellent, sir! Excellent! As if he were righting the overturned, or revealing the hidden, or pointing out the path to the lost, or lighting a lamp in the dark so people with clear eyes can see what's there, the Buddha has made the teaching clear in many ways. I go for refuge to the Buddha, to the teaching, and to the mendicant Saṅgha. Sir, may I receive the going forth, the ordination in the Buddha's presence?" 3.7

And the dancing master Tālapuṭa received the going forth, the ordination in the Buddha's presence. Not long after his ordination, Venerable Tālapuṭa became one of the perfected. 3.11

SN 42.3

## A Warrior

*Yodhājīvasutta*

- 1.1 Then Dustin the warrior chief went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.2 “Sir, I have heard that the warriors of the past who were teachers of teachers said: ‘Suppose a warrior, while striving and struggling in battle, is killed and finished off by his foes. When his body breaks up, after death, he’s reborn in the company of the gods of the fallen.’ What does the Buddha say about this?”
- 1.5 “Enough, chief, let it be. Don’t ask me that.”
- 1.6 For a second time . . .
- 1.7 And for a third time the warrior chief said to the Buddha:
- 1.8 “Sir, I have heard that the warriors of the past who were teachers of teachers said: ‘Suppose a warrior, while striving and struggling in battle, is killed and finished off by his foes. When his body breaks up, after death, he’s reborn in the company of the gods of the fallen.’ What does the Buddha say about this?”
- 2.1 “Clearly, chief, I’m not getting through to you when I say: ‘Enough, chief, let it be. Don’t ask me that.’ Nevertheless, I will answer you.
- 2.4 When a warrior strives and struggles in battle, their mind is already low, degraded, and misdirected as they think: ‘May these sentient beings be killed, slaughtered, slain, destroyed, or annihilated!’ His foes kill him and finish him off, and when his body breaks up, after death, he’s reborn in the hell called ‘The Fallen’.
- 2.8 But if you have such a view: ‘Suppose a warrior, while striving and struggling in battle, is killed and finished off by his foes. When his body breaks up, after death, he’s reborn in the company of the gods of the fallen.’ This is your wrong view. An individual with wrong view is reborn in one of two places, I say: hell or the animal realm.”

When he said this, Dustin the warrior chief cried and burst out 3.1  
in tears.

“This is what I didn’t get through to you when I said: ‘Enough, 3.2  
chief, let it be. Don’t ask me that.’”

“Sir, I’m not crying because of what the Buddha said. But sir, for 3.4  
a long time I’ve been cheated, tricked, and deceived by the warriors  
of the past who were teachers of teachers, who said: ‘Suppose a  
warrior, while striving and struggling in battle, is killed and finished  
off by his foes. When his body breaks up, after death, he’s reborn  
in the company of the gods of the fallen.’

Excellent, sir! Excellent! ... From this day forth, may the Bud- 3.7  
dha remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for  
life.”

SN 42.4

## An Elephant Warrior

*Hatthārohasutta*

Then an elephant warrior chief went up to the Buddha ... “From 1.1  
this day forth, may the Buddha remember me as a lay follower who  
has gone for refuge for life.”

SN 42.5

## A Cavalryman

*Assārohasutta*

Then a cavalry chief went up to the Buddha ... 1.1

“From this day forth, may the Buddha remember me as a lay 4.1  
follower who has gone for refuge for life.”

SN 42.6

## With Asibandhaka's Son

*Asibandhakaputtasutta*

1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Nāḷandā in Pāvārika's mango grove.

1.2 Then Asibandhaka's son the chief went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:

2.1 "Sir, there are western brahmins draped with moss who carry pitchers, immerse themselves in water, and serve the sacred flame. When someone has passed away, they truly lift them up, raise them up, and guide them along to heaven. But what about the Blessed One, the perfected one, the fully awakened Buddha: is he able to ensure that the whole world will be reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm when their body breaks up, after death?"

3.1 "Well then, chief, I'll ask you about this in return, and you can answer as you like.

4.1 What do you think, chief? Take a person who kills living creatures, steals, and commits sexual misconduct. They use speech that's false, divisive, harsh, or nonsensical. And they're covetous, malicious, and have wrong view. And a large crowd comes together to offer up prayers and praise, circumambulating them with joined palms and saying: 'When this person's body breaks up, after death, may they be reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm!' What do you think, chief? Would that person be reborn in heaven because of their prayers?"

4.7 "No, sir."

5.1 "Chief, suppose a person were to throw a broad rock into a deep lake. And a large crowd was to come together to offer up prayers and praise, circumambulating it with joined palms, and saying: 'Rise, good rock! Float, good rock! Float to shore, good rock!' What do you think, chief? Would that broad rock rise up or float because of their prayers?"

5.6 "No, sir."

“In the same way, take a person who kills living creatures, steals, 5.7  
and commits sexual misconduct. They use speech that’s false, divisive, harsh, or nonsensical. And they’re covetous, malicious, and have wrong view. Even though a large crowd comes together to offer up prayers and praise ... when their body breaks up, after death, they’re reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell.

What do you think, chief? Take a person who doesn’t kill living 6.1  
creatures, steal, or commit sexual misconduct. They don’t use speech that’s false, divisive, harsh, or nonsensical. And they’re contented, kind-hearted, and have right view. And a large crowd comes together to offer up prayers and praise, circumambulating them with joined palms and saying: ‘When this person’s body breaks up, after death, may they be reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell!’ What do you think, chief? Would that person be reborn in hell because of their prayers?”

“No, sir.” 6.7

“Chief, suppose a person were to sink a pot of ghee or oil into a 7.1  
deep lake and break it open. Its shards and chips would sink down, while the ghee or oil in it would rise up. And a large crowd was to come together to offer up prayers and praise, circumambulating it with joined palms and saying: ‘Sink, good ghee or oil! Descend, good ghee or oil! Go down, good ghee or oil!’ What do you think, chief? Would that ghee or oil sink and descend because of their prayers?”

“No, sir.” 7.6

“In the same way, take a person who doesn’t kill living creatures, 8.1  
steal, or commit sexual misconduct. They don’t use speech that’s false, divisive, harsh, or nonsensical. And they’re contented, kind-hearted, and have right view. Even though a large crowd comes together to offer up prayers and praise ... when their body breaks up, after death, they’re reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.”

- 8.4 When he said this, Asibandhaka's son the chief said to the Buddha, "Excellent, sir! ... From this day forth, may the Buddha remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life."

SN 42.7

## The Simile of the Field

*Khettūpamasutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Nālandā in Pāvārika's mango grove. Then Asibandhaka's son the chief went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.3 "Sir, doesn't the Buddha live full of compassion for all living beings?"
- 1.4 "Yes, chief."
- 1.5 "Well, sir, why exactly do you teach some people thoroughly and others less thoroughly?"
- 1.6 "Well then, chief, I'll ask you about this in return, and you can answer as you like. What do you think? Suppose a farmer has three fields: one's good, one's average, and one's poor—bad ground of sand and salt. What do you think? When that farmer wants to plant seeds, where would he plant them first: the good field, the average one, or the poor one?"
- 1.9 "Sir, he'd plant them first in the good field, then the average, then he may or may not plant seed in the poor field. Why is that? Because at least it can be fodder for the cattle."
- 2.1 "To me, the monks and nuns are like the good field. I teach them the Dhamma that's good in the beginning, good in the middle, and good in the end, meaningful and well-phrased. And I reveal a spiritual practice that's entirely full and pure. Why is that? Because they live with me as their island, protection, shelter, and refuge."
- 2.5 To me, the laymen and laywomen are like the average field. I also teach them the Dhamma that's good in the beginning, good in the middle, and good in the end, meaningful and well-phrased. And I reveal a spiritual practice that's entirely full and pure. Why is



that? Because they live with me as their island, protection, shelter, and refuge.

To me, the ascetics, brahmins, and wanderers of other religions 2.9  
are like the poor field, the bad ground of sand and salt. I also teach them the Dhamma that's good in the beginning, good in the middle, and good in the end, meaningful and well-phrased. And I reveal a spiritual practice that's entirely full and pure. Why is that? Hopefully they might understand even a single sentence, which would be for their lasting welfare and happiness.

Suppose a person had three water jars: one that's uncracked 3.1  
and nonporous; one that's uncracked but porous; and one that's cracked and porous. What do you think? When that person wants to store water, where would they store it first: in the jar that's uncracked and nonporous, the one that's uncracked but porous, or the one that's cracked and porous?"

"Sir, they'd store water first in the jar that's uncracked and non- 3.3  
porous, then the one that's uncracked but porous, then they may or may not store water in the one that's cracked and porous. Why is that? Because at least it can be used for washing the dishes."

"To me, the monks and nuns are like the water jar that's un- 4.1  
cracked and nonporous. I teach them the Dhamma that's good in the beginning, good in the middle, and good in the end, meaningful and well-phrased. And I reveal a spiritual practice that's entirely full and pure. Why is that? Because they live with me as their island, protection, shelter, and refuge.

To me, the laymen and laywomen are like the water jar that's 4.5  
uncracked but porous. I teach them the Dhamma that's good in the beginning, good in the middle, and good in the end, meaningful and well-phrased. And I reveal a spiritual practice that's entirely full and pure. Why is that? Because they live with me as their island, protection, shelter, and refuge.

To me, the ascetics, brahmins, and wanderers of other religions 4.9  
are like the water jar that's cracked and porous. I also teach them the Dhamma that's good in the beginning, good in the middle, and

good in the end, meaningful and well-phrased. And I reveal a spiritual practice that's entirely full and pure. Why is that? Hopefully they might understand even a single sentence, which would be for their lasting welfare and happiness."

- 5.1 When he said this, Asibandhaka's son the chief said to the Buddha, "Excellent, sir! Excellent! ... From this day forth, may the Buddha remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life."

SN 42.8

## A Horn Blower

*Saṅkhadhamasutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Nālandā in Pāvārika's mango grove.
- 1.2 Then Asibandhaka's son the chief, who was a disciple of the Jains, went up to the Buddha, and sat down to one side. The Buddha said to him, "Chief, how does the Jain ascetic of the Ñātika clan teach his disciples?"
- 1.4 "Sir, this is how the Jain Ñātika teaches his disciples: 'Everyone who kills a living creature, steals, commits sexual misconduct, or lies goes to a place of loss, to hell. You're led on by what you usually live by.' This is how the Jain Ñātika teaches his disciples."
- 1.8 "'You're led on by what you usually live by': if this were true, then, according to what the Jain Ñātika says, no-one would go to a place of loss, to hell."
- 2.1 What do you think, chief? Take a person who kills living creatures. If we compare periods of time during the day and night, which is more frequent: the occasions when they're killing or when they're not killing?"
- 2.3 "The occasions when they're killing are less frequent, while the occasions when they're not killing are more frequent."

“‘You’re led on by what you usually live by’: if this were true, 2.4  
then, according to what the Jain ascetic of the Ñātika clan says,  
no-one would go to a place of loss, to hell.

What do you think, chief? Take a person who steals ... 3.1

Take a person who commits sexual misconduct ... 4.1

Take a person who lies. If we compare periods of time during 5.1  
the day and night, which is more frequent: the occasions when  
they’re lying or when they’re not lying?”

“The occasions when they’re lying are less frequent, while the 5.2  
occasions when they’re not lying are more frequent.”

“‘You’re led on by what you usually live by’: if this were true, 5.3  
then, according to what the Jain Ñātika says, no-one would go to a  
place of loss, to hell.

Take some teacher who has this doctrine and view: ‘Everyone 6.1  
who kills a living creature, steals, commits sexual misconduct, or  
lies goes to a place of loss, to hell.’ And there’s a disciple who is  
devoted to that teacher. They think: ‘My teacher has this doctrine  
and view: “Everyone who kills a living creature, steals, commits  
sexual misconduct, or lies goes to a place of loss, to hell.” But I’ve  
killed living creatures ... stolen ... committed sexual misconduct  
... or lied.’ They get the view: ‘I too am going to a place of loss, to  
hell.’ Unless they give up that speech and that thought, and let go  
of that view, they will be cast down to hell.

But consider when a Realized One arises in the world, perfected, 7.1  
a fully awakened Buddha, accomplished in knowledge and con-  
duct, holy, knower of the world, supreme guide for those who wish  
to train, teacher of gods and humans, awakened, blessed. In many  
ways he criticizes and denounces killing living creatures, saying:  
‘Stop killing living creatures!’ He criticizes and denounces stealing  
... sexual misconduct ... lying, saying: ‘Stop lying!’ And there’s a  
disciple who is devoted to that teacher. Then they reflect: ‘In many  
ways the Buddha criticizes and denounces killing living creatures,  
saying: “Stop killing living creatures!” But I have killed living crea-  
tures to a certain extent. That’s not right, it’s not good, and I feel

remorseful because of it. But I can't undo what I have done.' Reflecting like this, they give up killing living creatures, and in future they don't kill living creatures. That's how to give up this bad deed and get past it.

8.1 'In many ways the Buddha criticizes and denounces stealing ...'

9.1 'In many ways the Buddha criticizes and denounces sexual misconduct ...'

10.1 'In many ways the Buddha criticizes and denounces lying, saying: "Stop lying!" But I have lied to a certain extent. That's not right, it's not good, and I feel remorseful because of it. But I can't undo what I have done.' Reflecting like this, they give up lying, and in future they refrain from lying. That's how to give up this bad deed and get past it.

11.1 They give up killing living creatures. They give up stealing. They give up sexual misconduct. They give up lying. They give up divisive speech. They give up harsh speech. They give up talking nonsense. They give up covetousness. They give up ill will and malevolence. They give up wrong view and have right view.

12.1 That noble disciple is rid of desire, rid of ill will, unconfused, aware, and mindful. They meditate spreading a heart full of love to one direction, and to the second, and to the third, and to the fourth. In the same way above, below, across, everywhere, all around, they spread a heart full of love to the whole world—abundant, expansive, limitless, free of enmity and ill will. Suppose there was a powerful horn blower. They'd easily make themselves heard in the four quarters. In the same way, when the heart's release by love has been developed and cultivated like this, any limited deeds they've done don't remain or persist there.

13.1 Then that noble disciple is rid of desire, rid of ill will, unconfused, aware, and mindful. They meditate spreading a heart full of compassion ... They meditate spreading a heart full of rejoicing ... They meditate spreading a heart full of equanimity to one direction, and to the second, and to the third, and to the fourth. In the same way above, below, across, everywhere, all around, they spread a

heart full of equanimity to the whole world—abundant, expansive, limitless, free of enmity and ill will. Suppose there was a powerful horn blower. They’d easily make themselves heard in the four quarters. In the same way, when the heart’s release by equanimity has been developed and cultivated like this, any limited deeds they’ve done don’t remain or persist there.”

When he said this, Asibandhaka’s son the chief said to the Buddha, “Excellent, sir! Excellent! ... From this day forth, may the Buddha remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life.” 14.1

SN 42.9

## Families

*Kulasutta*

At one time the Buddha was wandering in the land of the Kosalans together with a large Saṅgha of mendicants when he arrived at Nālandā. There he stayed near Nālandā in Pāvārika’s mango grove. 1.1

Now that was a time of famine and scarcity in Nālandā, with blighted crops turned to straw. At that time the Jain ascetic of the Ñātika clan was residing at Nālandā together with a large assembly of Jain ascetics. Then Asibandhaka’s son the chief, who was a disciple of the Jains, went up to the Jain Ñātika, bowed, and sat down to one side. The Jain Ñātika said to him: 2.1

“Come, chief, refute the ascetic Gotama’s doctrine. Then you will get a good reputation: ‘Asibandhaka’s son the chief refuted the doctrine of the ascetic Gotama, so mighty and powerful!’” 2.4

“But sir, how am I to do this?” 3.1

“Here, brahmin, go to the ascetic Gotama and say to him: ‘Sir, don’t you in many ways praise kindness, protection, and compassion for families?’ When he’s asked this, if he answers: ‘Indeed I do, chief,’ say this to him: ‘So what exactly are you doing, wandering together with this large Saṅgha of mendicants during a time of famine and scarcity, with blighted crops turned to straw? The Bud- 3.2

dha is practicing to annihilate, collapse, and ruin families!’ When you put this dilemma to him, the Buddha won’t be able to either spit it out or swallow it down.”

3.9 “Yes, sir,” replied Asibandhaka’s son. He got up from his seat, bowed, and respectfully circled the Jain Nātika, keeping him on his right. Then he went to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:

4.1 “Sir, don’t you in many ways praise kindness, protection, and compassion for families?”

4.2 “Indeed I do, chief.”

4.3 “So what exactly are you doing, wandering together with this large Saṅgha of mendicants during a time of famine and scarcity, with blighted crops turned to straw? The Buddha is practicing to annihilate, collapse, and ruin families!”

4.5 “Well, chief, I recollect ninety-one eons back but I’m not aware of any family that’s been ruined merely by offering some cooked almsfood. Rather, rich, affluent, and wealthy families—with lots of gold and silver, lots of property and assets, and lots of money and grain—all acquired their wealth because of generosity, truth, and restraint.

4.7 Chief, there are eight causes and reasons for the ruin of families. Their ruin stems from rulers, bandits, fire, or flood. Or their savings vanish. Or their business fails due to not applying themselves to work. Or a wastrel is born into the family who squanders and fritters away their wealth. And impermanence is the eighth. These are the eight causes and reasons for the ruin of families.

4.10 Given that these eight reasons are found, suppose someone says this: ‘The Buddha is practicing to annihilate, collapse, and ruin families!’ Unless they give up that speech and that thought, and let go of that view, they will be cast down to hell.”

5.1 When he said this, Asibandhaka’s son the chief said to the Buddha, “Excellent, sir! Excellent! ... From this day forth, may the Buddha remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life.”

SN 42.10

## With MañicūḲa

*MañicūḲasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Rājagaha, in the Bamboo Grove, the squirrels' feeding ground. Now at that time while the king's retinue was sitting together in the royal compound this discussion came up among them, "Gold and money are proper for Sakyan ascetics. They accept and receive gold and money." 1.1

Now at that time the chief MañicūḲa was sitting in that assembly. He said to that retinue, "Good sirs, don't say that. Gold and money are not proper for Sakyan ascetics. They neither accept nor receive gold and money. They have set aside gems and gold, and rejected gold and money." He was able to persuade that assembly. 2.1

Then MañicūḲa went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and told him what had happened. He then said, "Answering this way, I trust that I repeat what the Buddha has said, and don't misrepresent him with an untruth. I trust my explanation is in line with the teaching, and that there are no legitimate grounds for rebuke or criticism." 2.6

"Indeed, in answering this way you repeat what I've said, and don't misrepresent me with an untruth. Your explanation is in line with the teaching, and there are no legitimate grounds for rebuke or criticism." 3.1

Gold and money are not proper for Sakyan ascetics. They neither accept nor receive gold and money. They have set aside gems and gold, and rejected gold and money. 3.2

If gold and money were proper for them, then the five kinds of sensual stimulation would also be proper. And if the five kinds of sensual stimulation are proper for them, you should categorically regard them as not having the qualities of an ascetic or a follower of the Sakyan. 3.3

Rather, chief, I say this: Straw may be looked for by one needing straw; wood may be looked for by one needing wood; a cart may 3.5

be looked for by one needing a cart; a workman may be looked for by one needing a workman. But I say that there is no way they can accept or look for gold and money.”

SN 42.11

## With Bhadraka

*Bhadrakasutta*

1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying in the land of the Mallas, near the Mallian town called Uruvelakappa. Then Bhadraka the village chief went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:

1.3 “Please, sir, teach me the origin and cessation of suffering.”

1.4 “Chief, if I were to teach you about the origin and ending of suffering in the past, saying ‘this is how it was in the past,’ you might have doubts or uncertainties about that. If I were to teach you about the origin and ending of suffering in the future, saying ‘this is how it will be in the future,’ you might have doubts or uncertainties about that. Rather, chief, I will teach you about the origin and ending of suffering as I am sitting right here and you are sitting right there. Listen and apply your mind well, I will speak.”

1.10 “Yes, sir,” Bhadraka replied. The Buddha said this:

2.1 “What do you think, chief? Are there any people here in Uruvelakappa who, if they were executed, imprisoned, fined, or condemned, it would cause you sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress?”

2.3 “There are, sir.”

2.4 “But are there any people here in Uruvelakappa who, if they were executed, imprisoned, fined, or condemned, it would not cause you sorrow, lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress?”

2.5 “There are, sir.”

2.6 “What’s the cause, chief, what’s the reason why, if this was to happen to some people it could cause you sorrow, while if it happens to others it does not?”



“The people regarding whom this would give rise to sorrow are 2.7  
those I desire and love. The people regarding whom this would  
not give rise to sorrow are those I don’t desire and love.”

“With this present phenomenon that is seen, known, immediate, 2.9  
attained, and fathomed, you may infer to the past and future: ‘All  
the suffering that arose in the past was rooted and sourced in desire.  
For desire is the root of suffering. All the suffering that will arise in  
the future will be rooted and sourced in desire. For desire is the  
root of suffering.’”

“It’s incredible, sir, it’s amazing! How well said this was by the 2.14  
Buddha! ‘All the suffering that arises is rooted and sourced in desire.  
For desire is the root of suffering.’

I have a boy called Ciravāsi, who resides in a house away from 2.18  
here. I rise early and send someone, saying: ‘Go, my man, and  
check on my boy Ciravāsi.’ Until they get back I worry: ‘I hope  
nothing’s wrong with Ciravāsi!’”

“What do you think, chief? If Ciravāsi was executed, impris- 3.1  
oned, fined, or condemned, would it cause you sorrow, lamen-  
tation, pain, sadness, and distress?”

“How could it not, sir?” 3.3

“This too is a way to understand: ‘All the suffering that arises is 3.4  
rooted and sourced in desire. For desire is the root of suffering.’

What do you think, chief? Before you’d seen or heard of Ci- 4.1  
ravāsi’s mother, did you have any desire or love or fondness for  
her?”

“No, sir.” 4.3

“Then was it because you saw or heard of her that you had desire 4.4  
or love or fondness for her?”

“Yes, sir.” 4.6

“What do you think, chief? If Ciravāsi’s mother was executed, 5.1  
imprisoned, fined, or condemned, would it cause you sorrow,  
lamentation, pain, sadness, and distress?”

“How could it not, sir?” 5.3

- 5.4 “This too is a way to understand: ‘All the suffering that arises is rooted and sourced in desire. For desire is the root of suffering.’”

SN 42.12

## With Rāsiya

*Rāsiyasutta*

- 1.1 Then Rāsiya the chief went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him:
- 1.2 “Sir, I have heard this: ‘The ascetic Gotama criticizes all forms of mortification. He categorically condemns and denounces those fervent mortifiers who live rough.’ Do those who say this repeat what the Buddha has said, and not misrepresent him with an untruth? Is their explanation in line with the teaching? Are there any legitimate grounds for rebuke and criticism?”
- 1.4 “Chief, those who say this do not repeat what I have said. They misrepresent me with what is false, hollow, and untrue.
- 2.1 These two extremes should not be cultivated by one who has gone forth. Indulgence in sensual pleasures, which is low, crude, ordinary, ignoble, and pointless. And indulgence in self-mortification, which is painful, ignoble, and pointless.
- 2.3 Avoiding these two extremes, the Realized One woke up by understanding the middle way of practice, which gives vision and knowledge, and leads to peace, direct knowledge, awakening, and extinguishment.
- 2.4 And what is that middle way of practice? It is simply this noble eightfold path, that is: right view, right thought, right speech, right action, right livelihood, right effort, right mindfulness, and right immersion.
- 2.7 This, chief, is the middle way of practice, woken up to by the Realized One, which gives vision and knowledge, and leads to peace, direct knowledge, awakening, and extinguishment.
- 3.1 There are these three kinds of pleasure seekers in the world. What three? Take a pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using illegit-

imate, coercive means, and who doesn't make themselves happy and pleased, or share it and make merit. Next, a pleasure seeker seeks wealth using illegitimate, coercive means. They make themselves happy and pleased, but don't share it and make merit. Next, a pleasure seeker seeks wealth using illegitimate, coercive means. They make themselves happy and pleased, and they share it and make merit.

Next, a pleasure seeker seeks wealth using means both legitimate and illegitimate, and coercive and non-coercive. They don't make themselves happy and pleased, or share it and make merit. Next, a pleasure seeker seeks wealth using means both legitimate and illegitimate, and coercive and non-coercive. They don't make themselves happy and pleased, or share it and make merit. Next, a pleasure seeker seeks wealth using means both legitimate and illegitimate, and coercive and non-coercive. They make themselves happy and pleased, and they share it and make merit. 4.1

Next, a pleasure seeker seeks wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. They don't make themselves happy and pleased, or share it and make merit. Next, a pleasure seeker seeks wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. They make themselves happy and pleased, but don't share it and make merit. Next, a pleasure seeker seeks wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. They make themselves happy and pleased, and they share it and make merit. They enjoy that wealth tied, infatuated, attached, blind to the drawbacks, and not understanding the escape. Next, a pleasure seeker seeks wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. They make themselves happy and pleased, and they share it and make merit. And they enjoy that wealth untied, uninfatuated, unattached, seeing the drawbacks, and understanding the escape. 5.1

Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using illegitimate, coercive means, and who doesn't make themselves happy and pleased, or share it and make merit. They may be criticized on three grounds. What three? They seek wealth using illegitimate, coercive means. This is the first ground for criticism. They don't 6.1

make themselves happy and pleased. This is the second ground for criticism. They don't share it and make merit. This is the third ground for criticism. This pleasure seeker may be criticized on these three grounds.

- 7.1 Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using illegitimate, coercive means, and who makes themselves happy and pleased, but doesn't share it and make merit. This pleasure seeker may be criticized on two grounds, and praised on one. What are the two grounds for criticism? They seek wealth using illegitimate, coercive means. This is the first ground for criticism. They don't share it and make merit. This is the second ground for criticism. What is the one ground for praise? They make themselves happy and pleased. This is the one ground for praise. This pleasure seeker may be criticized on these two grounds, and praised on this one.
- 8.1 Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using illegitimate, coercive means, and who makes themselves happy and pleased, and shares it and makes merit. This pleasure seeker may be criticized on one ground, and praised on two. What is the one ground for criticism? They seek wealth using illegitimate, coercive means. This is the one ground for criticism. What are the two grounds for praise? They make themselves happy and pleased. This is the first ground for praise. They share it and make merit. This is the second ground for praise. This pleasure seeker may be criticized on this one ground, and praised on these two.
- 9.1 Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using means both legitimate and illegitimate, and coercive and non-coercive, and who doesn't make themselves happy and pleased, or share it and make merit. They may be praised on one ground, and criticized on three. What is the one ground for praise? They seek wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. This is the one ground for praise. What are the three grounds for criticism? They seek wealth using illegitimate, coercive means. This is the first ground for criticism. They don't make themselves happy and pleased. This is the second ground for criticism. They don't share it and make merit. This is

the third ground for criticism. This pleasure seeker may be praised on this one ground, and criticized on these three.

Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using means both legitimate and illegitimate, and coercive and non-coercive, and makes themselves happy and pleased, but doesn't share it and make merit. They may be praised on two grounds, and criticized on two. What are the two grounds for praise? They seek wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. This is the first ground for praise. They make themselves happy and pleased. This is the second ground for praise. What are the two grounds for criticism? They seek wealth using illegitimate, coercive means. This is the first ground for criticism. They don't share it and make merit. This is the second ground for criticism. This pleasure seeker may be praised on these two grounds, and criticized on these two. 10.1

Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using means both legitimate and illegitimate, and coercive and non-coercive, and who makes themselves happy and pleased, and shares it and makes merit. They may be praised on three grounds, and criticized on one. What are the three grounds for praise? They seek wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. This is the first ground for praise. They make themselves happy and pleased. This is the second ground for praise. They share it and make merit. This is the third ground for praise. What is the one ground for criticism? They seek wealth using illegitimate, coercive means. This is the one ground for criticism. This pleasure seeker may be praised on these three grounds, and criticized on this one. 11.1

Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means, but who doesn't make themselves happy and pleased, or share it and make merit. They may be praised on one ground, and criticized on two. What is the one ground for praise? They seek wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. This is the one ground for praise. What are the two grounds for criticism? They don't make themselves happy and pleased. This is the first ground for criticism. They don't share it and make merit. 12.1

This is the second ground for criticism. This pleasure seeker may be praised on this one ground, and criticized on these two.

- 13.1 Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means, and who makes themselves happy and pleased, but doesn't share it and make merit. This pleasure seeker may be praised on two grounds, and criticized on one. What are the two grounds for praise? They seek wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. This is the first ground for praise. They make themselves happy and pleased. This is the second ground for praise. What is the one ground for criticism? They don't share it and make merit. This is the one ground for criticism. This pleasure seeker may be praised on these two grounds, and criticized on this one.

- 14.1 Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means, and who makes themselves happy and pleased, and shares it and makes merit. But they enjoy that wealth tied, infatuated, attached, blind to the drawbacks, and not understanding the escape. They may be praised on three grounds and criticized on one. What are the three grounds for praise? They seek wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. This is the first ground for praise. They make themselves happy and pleased. This is the second ground for praise. They share it and make merit. This is the third ground for praise. What is the one ground for criticism? They enjoy that wealth tied, infatuated, attached, blind to the drawbacks, and not understanding the escape. This is the one ground for criticism. This pleasure seeker may be praised on these three grounds, and criticized on this one.

- 15.1 Now, consider the pleasure seeker who seeks wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means, and who makes themselves happy and pleased, and shares it and makes merit. And they enjoy that wealth untied, uninfatuated, unattached, seeing the drawbacks, and understanding the escape. This pleasure seeker may be praised on four grounds. What are the four grounds for praise? They seek wealth using legitimate, non-coercive means. This is the first ground for praise. They make themselves happy and pleased. This is the sec-

ond ground for praise. They share it and make merit. This is the third ground for praise. They enjoy that wealth untied, uninfatuated, unattached, seeing the drawbacks, and understanding the escape. This is the fourth ground for praise. This pleasure seeker may be praised on these four grounds.

These three fervent mortifiers who live rough are found in the world. What three? 16.1

Take a fervent mortifier who has gone forth from the lay life to homelessness, thinking: 'Hopefully I will achieve a skillful quality! Hopefully I will realize a superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones!' They mortify and torment themselves. But they don't achieve any skillful quality, or realize any superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones. 16.3

Take another fervent mortifier who has gone forth from the lay life to homelessness, thinking: 'Hopefully I will achieve a skillful quality! Hopefully I will realize a superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones!' They mortify and torment themselves. And they achieve a skillful quality, but don't realize any superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones. 17.1

Take another fervent mortifier who has gone forth from the lay life to homelessness, thinking: 'Hopefully I will achieve a skillful quality! Hopefully I will realize a superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones!' They mortify and torment themselves. And they achieve a skillful quality, and they realize a superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones. 18.1

In this case, the first fervent mortifier may be criticized on three grounds. What three? They mortify and torment themselves. This is the first ground for criticism. They don't achieve a skillful quality. This is the second ground for criticism. They don't realize a superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the 19.1

noble ones. This is the third ground for criticism. This fervent mortifier may be criticized on these three grounds.

20.1 In this case, the second fervent mortifier may be criticized on two grounds, and praised on one. What are the two grounds for criticism? They mortify and torment themselves. This is the first ground for criticism. They don't realize a superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones. This is the second ground for criticism. What is the one ground for praise? They achieve a skillful quality. This is the one ground for praise. This fervent mortifier may be criticized on these two grounds, and praised on one.

21.1 In this case, the third fervent mortifier may be criticized on one ground, and praised on two. What is the one ground for criticism? They mortify and torment themselves. This is the one ground for criticism. What are the two grounds for praise? They achieve a skillful quality. This is the first ground for praise. They realize a superhuman distinction in knowledge and vision worthy of the noble ones. This is the second ground for praise. This fervent mortifier may be criticized on this one ground, and praised on two.

22.1 There are these three kinds of wearing away that are apparent in the present life, immediately effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can know them for themselves. What three?

22.3 A greedy person, because of greed, intends to hurt themselves, hurt others, and hurt both. When they've given up greed they don't have such intentions. This wearing away is apparent in the present life, immediately effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can know it for themselves.

22.6 A hateful person, because of hate, intends to hurt themselves, hurt others, and hurt both. When they've given up hate they don't have such intentions. This wearing away is apparent in the present life, immediately effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can know it for themselves.

22.9 A deluded person, because of delusion, intends to hurt themselves, hurt others, and hurt both. When they've given up delusion



they don't have such intentions. This wearing away is apparent in the present life, immediately effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can know it for themselves.

These are the three kinds of wearing away that are apparent in the present life, immediately effective, inviting inspection, relevant, so that sensible people can know them for themselves.” 22.12

When he said this, Rāsiya the chief said to the Buddha, “Excellent, sir! Excellent! ... From this day forth, may the Buddha remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life.” 23.1

SN 42.13

## With Pāṭaliya

*Pāṭaliyasutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying in the land of the Koliyans, where they have a town called Uttara. Then Pāṭaliya the chief went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to him: 1.1

“Sir, I have heard this: ‘The ascetic Gotama knows magic.’ Do those who say this repeat what the Buddha has said, and not misrepresent him with an untruth? Is their explanation in line with the teaching? Are there any legitimate grounds for rebuke and criticism? For we don't want to misrepresent the Blessed One.” 1.3

“Chief, those who say this repeat what I have said, and don't misrepresent me with an untruth. Their explanation is in line with the teaching, and there are no legitimate grounds for rebuke and criticism.” 2.3

“Sir, we didn't believe that what those ascetics and brahmins said was really true. But it seems the ascetic Gotama is a magician!” 2.4

“Chief, does someone who says ‘I know magic’ also say ‘I am a magician’?” 2.6

“That's right, Blessed One! That's right, Holy One!” 2.7

“Well then, chief, I'll ask you about this in return, and you can answer as you like.” 2.8

- 3.1 What do you think, chief? Do you know the Koliyan officers with drooping headdresses?”
- 3.3 “I know them, sir.”
- 3.4 “And what’s their job?”
- 3.5 “To put a stop to bandits and to deliver messages for the Koliyans.”
- 3.6 “What do you think, chief? Are the Koliyan officers with drooping headdresses moral or immoral?”
- 3.8 “I know that they’re immoral, of bad character, sir. They are among those in the world who are immoral and of bad character.”
- 3.9 “Would it be right to say that Pāṭaliya knows the Kolyian officers with drooping headdresses who are immoral, of bad character, so he too must be immoral and of bad character?”
- 3.11 “No, sir. I’m quite different from the Koliyan officers with drooping headdresses, we have quite different characters.”
- 3.13 “So if you can know those officers of bad character while you are not of bad character, why can’t the Realized One know magic, without being a magician?”
- 3.14 I understand magic and its result. And I understand how magicians practice so that when their body breaks up, after death, they’re reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell.
- 4.1 I understand killing living creatures and its result. And I understand how those who kill living creatures practice so that when their body breaks up, after death, they’re reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell. I understand stealing ... sexual misconduct ... lying ... divisive speech ... harsh speech ... talking nonsense ... covetousness ... ill will ... wrong view and its result. And I understand how those who have wrong view practice so that when their body breaks up, after death, they’re reborn in a place of loss, a bad place, the underworld, hell.
- 5.1 There are some ascetics and brahmins who have this doctrine and view: ‘Everyone who kills living creatures experiences pain and sadness in the present life. Everyone who steals ... commits sexual

misconduct ... lies experiences pain and sadness in the present life.'

But you can see someone, garlanded and adorned, nicely bathed 6.1  
and anointed, hair and beard dressed, taking his pleasure with  
women as if he were a king. You might ask someone: 'Mister, what  
did that man do?' And they'd reply: 'Mister, that man attacked the  
king's enemy and killed them. The king was delighted and gave  
him this reward. That's why he's garlanded and adorned, nicely  
bathed and anointed, hair and beard dressed, taking his pleasure  
with women as if he were a king.'

And you can see someone else, his arms tied tightly behind his 7.1  
back with a strong rope. His head is shaven and he's marched from  
street to street and from square to square to the beating of a harsh  
drum. Then he's taken out the south gate and there, to the south of  
the city, they chop off his head. You might ask someone: 'Mister,  
what did that man do?' And they'd reply: 'Mister, that man is an  
enemy of the king, and he has murdered a man or a woman. That's  
why the rulers arrested him and inflicted such punishment.'

What do you think, chief? Have you seen or heard of such a 8.1  
thing?"

"Sir, we have seen it and heard of it, and we will hear of it again." 8.3

"Since this is so, the ascetics and brahmins whose view is that 8.4  
everyone who kills living creatures experiences pain and sadness  
in the present life: are they right or wrong?"

"They're wrong, sir." 8.6

"But those who speak hollow, false nonsense: are they moral or 8.7  
immoral?"

"Immoral, sir." 8.8

"And are those who are immoral, of bad character practicing 8.9  
wrongly or rightly?"

"They're practicing wrongly, sir." 8.10

"And do those who are practicing wrongly have wrong view or 8.11  
right view?"

"They have wrong view, sir." 8.12

- 8.13 “But is it appropriate to have confidence in those of wrong view?”
- 8.14 “No, sir.”
- 9.1 “You can see someone, garlanded and adorned ... ‘Mister, that man attacked the king’s enemy and took their valuables. The king was delighted and gave him this reward. ...’ ...
- 10.1 And you can see someone else, his arms tied tightly behind his back ... ‘Mister, that man took something from a village or wilderness, with the intention to commit theft. That’s why the rulers arrested him and inflicted such punishment.’ What do you think, chief? Have you seen or heard of such a thing?”
- 10.8 “Sir, we have seen it and heard of it, and we will hear of it again.”
- 10.9 “Since this is so, the ascetics and brahmins whose view is that everyone who steals experiences pain and sadness in the present life: are they right or wrong? ... Is it appropriate to have confidence in them?”
- 10.12 “No, sir.”
- 11.1 “You can see someone, garlanded and adorned ... ‘Mister, that man had sexual relations with the wives of an enemy king. The king was delighted and gave him this reward. ...’ ...
- 12.1 And you can see someone else, his arms tied tightly behind his back ... ‘Mister, that man had sexual relations with the women and maidens of good families. That’s why the rulers arrested him and inflicted such punishment.’ What do you think, chief? Have you seen or heard of such a thing?”
- 12.9 “Sir, we have seen it and heard of it, and we will hear of it again.”
- 12.10 “Since this is so, the ascetics and brahmins whose view is that everyone who commits sexual misconduct experiences pain and sadness in the present life: are they right or wrong? ... Is it appropriate to have confidence in them?”
- 12.13 “No, sir.”
- 13.1 “And you can see someone, garlanded and adorned ... ‘Mister, that man amused the king with lies. The king was delighted and gave him this reward. ...’ ...

And you can see someone else, his arms tied tightly behind his back ... ‘Mister, that man has ruined a householder or householder’s child by lying. That’s why the rulers arrested him and inflicted such punishment.’ What do you think, chief? Have you seen or heard of such a thing?” 14.1

“Sir, we have seen it and heard of it, and we will hear of it again.” 14.9

“Since this is so, the ascetics and brahmins whose view is that everyone who lies experiences pain and sadness in the present life: are they right or wrong?” 14.10

“They’re wrong, sir.” 14.12

“But those who speak hollow, false nonsense: are they moral or immoral?” 14.13

“Immoral, sir.” 14.14

“And are those who are immoral, of bad character practicing wrongly or rightly?” 14.15

“They’re practicing wrongly, sir.” 14.16

“And do those who are practicing wrongly have wrong view or right view?” 14.17

“They have wrong view, sir.” 14.18

“But is it appropriate to have confidence in those of wrong view?” 14.19

“No, sir.” 14.20

It’s incredible, sir, it’s amazing! I have a guest house, where there are cots, seats, water jars, and oil lamps. Whenever an ascetic or brahmin comes to stay, I share what I have as best I can. Once it so happened, sir, that four teachers of different views and opinions came to stay at my guest house. 15.1

One teacher had this doctrine and view: ‘There’s no meaning in giving, sacrifice, or offerings. There’s no fruit or result of good and bad deeds. There’s no afterlife. There’s no such thing as mother and father, or beings that are reborn spontaneously. And there’s no ascetic or brahmin who is rightly comported and rightly practiced, and who describes the afterlife after realizing it with their own insight.’ 16.1

- 17.1 One teacher had this doctrine and view: ‘There is meaning in giving, sacrifice, and offerings. There are fruits and results of good and bad deeds. There is an afterlife. There are such things as mother and father, and beings that are reborn spontaneously. And there are ascetics and brahmins who are rightly comported and rightly practiced, and who describe the afterlife after realizing it with their own insight.’
- 18.1 One teacher had this doctrine and view: ‘The one who acts does nothing wrong when they punish, mutilate, torture, aggrieve, oppress, intimidate, or when they encourage others to do the same. Nothing bad is done when they kill, steal, break into houses, plunder wealth, steal from isolated buildings, commit highway robbery, commit adultery, and lie. If you were to reduce all the living creatures of this earth to one heap and mass of flesh with a razor-edged chakram, no evil comes of that, and no outcome of evil. If you were to go along the south bank of the Ganges killing, mutilating, and torturing, and encouraging others to do the same, no evil comes of that, and no outcome of evil. If you were to go along the north bank of the Ganges giving and sacrificing and encouraging others to do the same, no merit comes of that, and no outcome of merit. In giving, self-control, restraint, and truthfulness there is no merit or outcome of merit.’
- 19.1 One teacher had this doctrine and view: ‘The one who acts does a bad deed when they punish, mutilate, torture, aggrieve, oppress, intimidate, or when they encourage others to do the same. A bad deed is done when they kill, steal, break into houses, plunder wealth, steal from isolated buildings, commit highway robbery, commit adultery, and lie. If you were to reduce all the living creatures of this earth to one heap and mass of flesh with a razor-edged chakram, evil comes of that, and an outcome of evil. If you were to go along the south bank of the Ganges killing, mutilating, and torturing, and encouraging others to do the same, evil comes of that, and an outcome of evil. If you were to go along the north bank of the Ganges giving and sacrificing and encouraging others

to do the same, merit comes of that, and an outcome of merit. In giving, self-control, restraint, and truthfulness there is merit and outcome of merit.’

I had doubt and uncertainty about that: ‘I wonder who of these 20.1  
respected ascetics and brahmins speaks the truth, and who speaks  
falsehood?’”

“Chief, no wonder you’re doubting and uncertain. Doubt has 21.1  
come up in you about an uncertain matter.”

“I am quite confident that the Buddha is capable of teaching me 21.3  
so that I can give up this state of uncertainty.”

“Chief, there is immersion based on understanding of principle. 22.1  
If you gain such mental immersion, you can give up that state of  
uncertainty.

And what is immersion based on understanding of principle? It’s 22.3  
when a noble disciple has given up killing living creatures, stealing,  
sexual misconduct, lying, divisive speech, harsh speech, talking  
nonsense, covetousness, ill will, and wrong view.

Then that noble disciple is rid of desire, rid of ill will, uncon- 23.1  
fused, aware, and mindful. They meditate spreading a heart full  
of love to one direction, and to the second, and to the third, and  
to the fourth. In the same way above, below, across, everywhere,  
all around, they spread a heart full of love to the whole world—  
abundant, expansive, limitless, free of enmity and ill will.

They reflect thus: ‘That teacher who had this doctrine and view: 23.2  
“There’s no meaning in giving, sacrifice, or offerings. There’s no fruit  
or result of good and bad deeds. There’s no afterlife. There’s no such  
thing as mother and father, or beings that are reborn spontaneously.  
And there’s no ascetic or brahmin who is rightly comported and  
rightly practiced, and who describes the afterlife after realizing it  
with their own insight.” If what this good teacher says is true, it’s a  
safe bet for me to not hurt any creature firm or frail. I hold a perfect  
hand on both counts, since I’m restrained in body, speech, and  
mind, and when my body breaks up, after death, I’ll be reborn in a  
good place, a heavenly realm.’

- 23.7 Joy springs up in them. Being joyful, rapture springs up. When the mind is full of rapture, the body becomes tranquil. When the body is tranquil, they feel bliss. And when blissful, the mind becomes immersed in samādhi. This is that immersion based on understanding of principle. If you gain such mental immersion, you can give up that state of uncertainty.
- 24.1 Then that noble disciple is rid of desire, rid of ill will, unfused, aware, and mindful. They meditate spreading a heart full of love to one direction, and to the second, and to the third, and to the fourth. In the same way above, below, across, everywhere, all around, they spread a heart full of love to the whole world—abundant, expansive, limitless, free of enmity and ill will.
- 24.2 They reflect thus: ‘That teacher who had this doctrine and view: “There is meaning in giving, sacrifice, and offerings. There are fruits and results of good and bad deeds. There is an afterlife. There are such things as mother and father, and beings that are reborn spontaneously. And there are ascetics and brahmins who are rightly comported and rightly practiced, and who describe the afterlife after realizing it with their own insight.” If what this good teacher says is true, it’s a safe bet for me to not hurt any creature firm or frail. I hold a perfect hand on both counts, since I’m restrained in body, speech, and mind, and when my body breaks up, after death, I’ll be reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.’
- 24.7 Joy springs up in them. Being joyful, rapture springs up. When the mind is full of rapture, the body becomes tranquil. When the body is tranquil, they feel bliss. And when blissful, the mind becomes immersed in samādhi. This is that immersion based on understanding of principle. If you gain such mental immersion, you can give up that state of uncertainty.
- 25.1 Then that noble disciple is rid of desire, rid of ill will, unfused, aware, and mindful. They meditate spreading a heart full of love to one direction, and to the second, and to the third, and to the fourth. In the same way above, below, across, everywhere,



all around, they spread a heart full of love to the whole world—abundant, expansive, limitless, free of enmity and ill will.

They reflect thus: ‘That teacher who had this doctrine and view: 25.2  
 “The one who acts does nothing wrong when they punish, mutilate, torture, aggrieve, oppress, intimidate, or when they encourage others to do the same. Nothing bad is done when they kill, steal, break into houses, plunder wealth, steal from isolated buildings, commit highway robbery, commit adultery, and lie. If you were to reduce all the living creatures of this earth to one heap and mass of flesh with a razor-edged chakram, no evil comes of that, and no outcome of evil. If you were to go along the south bank of the Ganges killing, mutilating, and torturing, and encouraging others to do the same, no evil comes of that, and no outcome of evil. If you were to go along the north bank of the Ganges giving and sacrificing and encouraging others to do the same, no merit comes of that, and no outcome of merit. In giving, self-control, restraint, and truthfulness there is no merit or outcome of merit.” If what this good teacher says is true, it’s a safe bet for me to not hurt any creature firm or frail. I hold a perfect hand on both counts, since I’m restrained in body, speech, and mind, and when my body breaks up, after death, I’ll be reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.’

Joy springs up in them. Being joyful, rapture springs up. When 25.11  
 the mind is full of rapture, the body becomes tranquil. When the body is tranquil, they feel bliss. And when blissful, the mind becomes immersed in samādhi. This is that immersion based on understanding of principle. If you gain such mental immersion, you can give up that state of uncertainty.

Then that noble disciple is rid of desire, rid of ill will, uncon- 26.1  
 fused, aware, and mindful. They meditate spreading a heart full of love to one direction, and to the second, and to the third, and to the fourth. In the same way above, below, across, everywhere, all around, they spread a heart full of love to the whole world—abundant, expansive, limitless, free of enmity and ill will.

26.2 They reflect thus: ‘That teacher who had this doctrine and view:

“The one who acts does a bad deed when they punish, mutilate, torture, aggrieve, oppress, intimidate, or when they encourage others to do the same. A bad deed is done when they kill, steal, break into houses, plunder wealth, steal from isolated buildings, commit highway robbery, commit adultery, and lie. If you were to reduce all the living creatures of this earth to one heap and mass of flesh with a razor-edged chakram, evil comes of that, and an outcome of evil. If you were to go along the south bank of the Ganges killing, mutilating, and torturing, and encouraging others to do the same, evil comes of that, and an outcome of evil. If you were to go along the north bank of the Ganges giving and sacrificing and encouraging others to do the same, merit comes of that, and an outcome of merit. In giving, self-control, restraint, and truthfulness there is merit and outcome of merit.” If what this good teacher says is true, it’s a safe bet for me to not hurt any creature firm or frail. I hold a perfect hand on both counts, since I’m restrained in body, speech, and mind, and when my body breaks up, after death, I’ll be reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.’

26.11 Joy springs up in them. Being joyful, rapture springs up. When the mind is full of rapture, the body becomes tranquil. When the body is tranquil, they feel bliss. And when blissful, the mind becomes immersed in samādhi. This is that immersion based on understanding of principle. If you gain such mental immersion, you can give up that state of uncertainty.

27.1 Then that noble disciple is rid of desire, rid of ill will, unfused, aware, and mindful. They meditate spreading a heart full of compassion ... rejoicing ... equanimity to one direction, and to the second, and to the third, and to the fourth. In the same way above, below, across, everywhere, all around, they spread a heart full of equanimity to the whole world—abundant, expansive, limitless, free of enmity and ill will.

31.1 They reflect thus: ‘If what this good teacher says is true, it’s a safe bet for me to not hurt any creature firm or frail. I hold a perfect

hand on both counts, since I'm restrained in body, speech, and mind, and when my body breaks up, after death, I'll be reborn in a good place, a heavenly realm.'

Joy springs up in them. Being joyful, rapture springs up. When 31.11  
the mind is full of rapture, the body becomes tranquil. When the body is tranquil, they feel bliss. And when blissful, the mind becomes immersed in samādhi. This is that immersion based on understanding of principle. If you gain such mental immersion, you can give up that state of uncertainty."

When he said this, Pāṭaliya the chief said to the Buddha, "Ex- 32.1  
cellent, sir! Excellent! ... From this day forth, may the Buddha remember me as a lay follower who has gone for refuge for life."

**The Linked Discourses on chiefs are complete.**

LINKED DISCOURSES ON  
THE UNCONDITIONED

# Chapter One

SN 43.1

## Mindfulness of the Body

*Kāyagatāsatisutta*

At Sāvatthī.

1.1

“Mendicants, I will teach you the unconditioned and the path 1.2  
that leads to the unconditioned. Listen ...

And what is the unconditioned? The ending of greed, hate, and 1.4  
delusion. This is called the unconditioned. And what is the path  
that leads to the unconditioned? Mindfulness of the body. This is  
called the path that leads to the unconditioned.

So, mendicants, I’ve taught you the unconditioned and the path 2.1  
that leads to the unconditioned. Out of compassion, I’ve done what  
a teacher should do who wants what’s best for their disciples. Here  
are these roots of trees, and here are these empty huts. Practice  
absorption, mendicants! Don’t be negligent! Don’t regret it later!  
This is my instruction to you.”

SN 43.2

## Serenity and Discernment

*Samathavipassanāsutta*

“Mendicants, I will teach you the unconditioned and the path that 1.1  
leads to the unconditioned. Listen ...

- 1.3 And what is the unconditioned? The ending of greed, hate, and delusion. This is called the unconditioned. And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? Serenity and discernment. This is called the path that leads to the unconditioned. ...”

SN 43.3

## Placing the Mind and Keeping it Connected

*Savitakkasavicārasutta*

- 1.1 “And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? Immersion with placing the mind and keeping it connected. Immersion without placing the mind, but just keeping it connected. Immersion without placing the mind or keeping it connected. ...”

SN 43.4

## Emptiness Immersion

*Suññatasamādhisutta*

- 1.1 “And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? Emptiness immersion; signless immersion; undirected immersion. ...”

SN 43.5

## Mindfulness Meditation

*Satipaṭṭhānasutta*

- 1.1 “And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? The four kinds of mindfulness meditation. ...”

SN 43.6

## Right Efforts

*Sammappadhānasutta*

“And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? The four 1.1  
right efforts. ...”

SN 43.7

## Bases of Psychic Power

*Iddhipādasutta*

“And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? The four 1.1  
bases of psychic power. ...”

SN 43.8

## Faculties

*Indriyasutta*

“And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? The five 1.1  
faculties. ...”

SN 43.9

## Powers

*Balasutta*

“And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? The five 1.1  
powers. ...”

SN 43.10

## Awakening Factors

*Bojjhaṅgasutta*

- 1.1 “And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? The seven awakening factors. ...”

SN 43.11

## The Path

*Maggaṅgasutta*

- 1.1 “And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? The noble eightfold path. This is called the path that leads to the unconditioned.
- 1.4 So, mendicants, I’ve taught you the unconditioned and the path that leads to the unconditioned. Out of compassion, I’ve done what a teacher should do who wants what’s best for their disciples. Here are these roots of trees, and here are these empty huts. Practice absorption, mendicants! Don’t be negligent! Don’t regret it later! This is my instruction to you.”



# Chapter Two

SN 43.12

## The Unconditioned

*Asaṅkhatasutta*

“Mendicants, I will teach you the unconditioned and the path that 1.1  
leads to the unconditioned. Listen ...

And what is the unconditioned? The ending of greed, hate, and 1.3  
delusion. This is called the unconditioned.

And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? Serenity. 1.6  
This is called the path that leads to the unconditioned.

So, mendicants, I’ve taught you the unconditioned and the path 1.9  
that leads to the unconditioned.

Out of compassion, I’ve done what a teacher should do who 1.10  
wants what’s best for their disciples. Here are these roots of trees,  
and here are these empty huts. Practice absorption, mendicants!  
Don’t be negligent! Don’t regret it later! This is my instruction to  
you.”

“Mendicants, I will teach you the unconditioned and the path 2.1  
that leads to the unconditioned. Listen ...

And what is the unconditioned? The ending of greed, hate, and 2.3  
delusion. This is called the unconditioned.

And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? Discern- 2.6  
ment. This is called the path that leads to the unconditioned. ...”

“And what is the path that leads to the unconditioned? 3.1

- 3.2 Immersion with placing the mind and keeping it connected. ...  
 Immersion without placing the mind, but just keeping it connected.  
 ... Immersion without placing the mind or keeping it connected.  
 ...
- 4.1 Emptiness immersion. ... Signless immersion. ... Undirected immersion. ...
- 5.1 A mendicant meditates by observing an aspect of the body—  
 keen, aware, and mindful, rid of covetousness and displeasure for  
 the world. ... A mendicant meditates by observing an aspect of feel-  
 ings ... A mendicant meditates by observing an aspect of the mind  
 ... A mendicant meditates by observing an aspect of principles ...
- 6.1 A mendicant generates enthusiasm, tries, makes an effort, exerts  
 the mind, and strives so that bad, unskillful qualities don't arise. ...  
 A mendicant generates enthusiasm, tries, makes an effort, exerts  
 the mind, and strives so that bad, unskillful qualities are given up.  
 ... A mendicant generates enthusiasm, tries, makes an effort, exerts  
 the mind, and strives so that skillful qualities arise. ... A mendicant  
 generates enthusiasm, tries, makes an effort, exerts the mind, and  
 strives so that skillful qualities that have arisen remain, are not lost,  
 but increase, mature, and are fulfilled by development. ...
- 7.1 A mendicant develops the basis of psychic power that has im-  
 mersion due to enthusiasm, and active effort. ... A mendicant  
 develops the basis of psychic power that has immersion due to  
 energy ... immersion due to mental development ... immersion  
 due to inquiry, and active effort. ...
- 8.1 A mendicant develops the faculty of faith, which relies on seclu-  
 sion, fading away, and cessation, and ripens as letting go. ... A  
 mendicant develops the faculty of energy ... mindfulness ... im-  
 mersion ... wisdom, which relies on seclusion, fading away, and  
 cessation, and ripens as letting go. ...
- 9.1 A mendicant develops the power of faith ... energy ... mindful-  
 ness ... immersion ... wisdom, which relies on seclusion, fading  
 away, and cessation, and ripens as letting go. ...

A mendicant develops the awakening factor of mindfulness ... 10.1  
 investigation of principles ... energy ... rapture ... tranquility ...  
 immersion ... equanimity, which relies on seclusion, fading away,  
 and cessation, and ripens as letting go. ...

A mendicant develops right view ... right thought ... right 11.1  
 speech ... right action ... right livelihood ... right effort ... right  
 mindfulness ... right immersion, which relies on seclusion, fading  
 away, and cessation, and ripens as letting go.

This is called the path that leads to the unconditioned. 11.16

So, mendicants, I've taught you the unconditioned and the path 11.17  
 that leads to the unconditioned.

Out of compassion, I've done what a teacher should do who 11.18  
 wants what's best for their disciples. Here are these roots of trees,  
 and here are these empty huts. Practice absorption, mendicants!  
 Don't be negligent! Don't regret it later! This is my instruction to  
 you."

SN 43.13

## Uninclined

*Anātasutta*

"Mendicants, I will teach you the uninclined ..." 1.1  
*(Tell in full as in the unconditioned in the previous chapter.)*

SN 43.14–43

## Unfiled, Etc.

*Anāsavādisutta*

"Mendicants, I will teach you the undefiled ... 1.1  
 the truth ... 1.1  
 the far shore ... 1.1  
 the subtle ... 1.1  
 the very hard to see ... 1.1

- 1.1 the freedom from old age ...
- 1.1 the constant ...
- 1.1 the not falling apart ...
- 1.1 that in which nothing appears ...
- 1.1 the unproliferated ...
- 1.1 the peaceful ...
- 1.1 the freedom from death ...
- 1.1 the sublime ...
- 1.1 the state of grace ...
- 1.1 the sanctuary ...
- 1.1 the ending of craving ...
- 1.1 the incredible ...
- 1.1 the amazing ...
- 1.1 the untroubled ...
- 1.1 the not liable to trouble ...
- 1.1 extinguishment ...
- 1.1 the unafflicted ...
- 1.1 dispassion ...
- 1.1 purity ...
- 1.1 freedom ...
- 1.1 not clinging ...
- 1.1 the island ...
- 1.1 the protection ...
- 1.1 the shelter ...
- 1.1 the refuge ...”

SN 43.44

## The Haven

*Parāyanasutta*

- 1.1 “Mendicants, I will teach you the haven and the path that leads to the haven. Listen ...
- 1.3 And what is the haven? The ending of greed, hate, and delusion. This is called the haven.

And what is the path that leads to the haven? Mindfulness of 1.6  
the body. This is called the path that leads to the haven.

So, mendicants, I've taught you the haven and the path that 1.9  
leads to the haven. Out of compassion, I've done what a teacher  
should do who wants what's best for their disciples. Here are these  
roots of trees, and here are these empty huts. Practice absorption,  
mendicants! Don't be negligent! Don't regret it later! This is my  
instruction to you."

*(Tell in full as in the unconditioned.)*

*The Linked Discourses on the unconditioned are complete.*

# LINKED DISCOURSES ON THE UNDECLARED

# The Chapter on the Undeclared Points

SN 44.1

With Khemā

*Khemāsutta*

At one time the Buddha was staying near Sāvattthī in Jeta’s Grove, 1.1  
Anāthapiṇḍika’s monastery.

Now at that time the nun Khemā was wandering in the land 1.2  
of the Kosalans between Sāvattthī and Sāketa when she took up  
residence in Toraṇavatthu. Then King Pasenadi was traveling from  
Sāketa to Sāvattthī, and he too stayed in Toraṇavatthu for a single  
night.

Then King Pasenadi addressed a man, “Please, mister, check if 1.4  
there’s a suitable ascetic or brahmin in Toraṇavatthu to whom I can  
pay homage.”

“Yes, Your Majesty,” replied that man. He searched all over 2.1  
Toraṇavatthu, but he couldn’t see a suitable ascetic or brahmin for  
the king to pay homage to.

But he saw that the nun Khemā was staying there, so he went 2.2  
to the king and said to him, “Your Majesty, there’s no ascetic or  
brahmin in Toraṇavatthu for the king to pay homage to. But there is  
the nun Khemā, who’s a disciple of the Blessed One, the perfected  
one, the fully awakened Buddha. She has a good reputation as

being astute, competent, clever, learned, a brilliant speaker, and eloquent. Your Majesty may pay homage to her.”

4.1 Then King Pasenadi of Kosala went up to the nun Khemā, bowed, sat down to one side, and said to her:

4.2 “Ma’am, does a realized one exist after death?”

4.3 “Great king, this has not been declared by the Buddha.”

4.5 “Well then, does a realized one not exist after death?”

4.6 “This too has not been declared by the Buddha.”

4.8 “Well then, does a realized one both exist and not exist after death?”

4.9 “This has not been declared by the Buddha.”

4.11 “Well then, does a realized one neither exist nor not exist after death?”

4.12 “This too has not been declared by the Buddha.”

5.1 “Ma’am, when asked these questions, you say that this has not been declared by the Buddha. What’s the cause, what’s the reason why this has not been declared by the Buddha?”

6.1 “Well then, great king, I’ll ask you about this in return, and you can answer as you like. What do you think, great king?”

6.3 Is there any accountant or finger-tallier or reckoner who can count the grains of sand in the Ganges, that is, how many grains of sand there are, how many hundreds or thousands or hundreds of thousands of grains of sand?”

6.5 “No, ma’am.”

6.6 “Is there any accountant or finger-tallier or reckoner who can count the water in the ocean, that is, how many gallons of water there are, how many hundreds or thousands or hundreds of thousands of gallons of water?”

6.8 “No, ma’am. Why is that? Because the ocean is deep, immeasurable, and hard to fathom.”

6.11 “In the same way, great king, any form by which a Realized One might be described has been cut off at the root, made like a palm stump, obliterated, and unable to arise in the future. A Realized One is freed from reckoning in terms of form. They’re



deep, immeasurable, and hard to fathom, like the ocean. To say that after death, a Realized One still exists, or no longer exists, or both still exists and no longer exists, or neither still exists nor no longer exists: none of these apply.

Any feeling . . . perception . . . choices . . . consciousness by which 7.1  
a Realized One might be described has been cut off at the root, made like a palm stump, obliterated, and unable to arise in the future. A Realized One is freed from reckoning in terms of consciousness. They're deep, immeasurable, and hard to fathom, like the ocean. To say that after death, a Realized One still exists, or no longer exists, or both still exists and no longer exists, or neither still exists nor no longer exists: none of these apply."

Then King Pasenadi approved and agreed with what the nun 9.5  
Khemā said. Then he got up from his seat, bowed, and respectfully circled her, keeping her on his right, before leaving.

Then on a later occasion King Pasenadi of Kosala went up to 10.1  
the Buddha, bowed, and sat down to one side. He asked the Buddha exactly the same questions he had asked the nun Khemā, and received the same answers.

He said, "It's incredible, sir, it's amazing! How the meaning and 13.1  
the phrasing of the teacher and the disciple fit together and agree without contradiction when it comes to the chief matter! This one time I went to the nun Khemā and asked her about this matter. And she explained it to me with these words and phrases, just like the Buddha. It's incredible, sir, it's amazing! How the meaning and the phrasing of the teacher and the disciple fit together and agree without contradiction when it comes to the chief matter!

Well, now, sir, I must go. I have many duties, and much to do." 13.7

"Please, great king, go at your convenience." 13.9

Then King Pasenadi approved and agreed with what the Buddha 13.10  
said. Then he got up from his seat, bowed, and respectfully circled him, keeping him on his right, before leaving.

SN 44.2

## With Anurādha

*Anurādhāsutta*

- 1.1 At one time the Buddha was staying near Vesālī, at the Great Wood, in the hall with the peaked roof.
- 1.2 Now at that time Venerable Anurādha was staying not far from the Buddha in a wilderness hut. Then several wanderers of other religions went up to Venerable Anurādha and exchanged greetings with him.
- 1.4 When the greetings and polite conversation were over, they sat down to one side and said to him:
- 1.5 “Reverend Anurādha, when a Realized One is describing a Realized One—a supreme person, highest of people, who has reached the highest point—they describe them in these four ways: After death, a Realized One still exists, or no longer exists, or both still exists and no longer exists, or neither still exists nor no longer exists.”
- 1.7 “Reverends, when a Realized One is describing a Realized One—a supreme person, highest of people, who has reached the highest point—they describe them other than these four ways: After death, a Realized One still exists, or no longer exists, or both still exists and no longer exists, or neither still exists nor no longer exists.”
- 1.9 When he said this, the wanderers said to him, “This mendicant must be junior, recently gone forth, or else a foolish, incompetent senior mendicant.” Then, after rebuking Venerable Anurādha by calling him “junior” and “foolish”, the wanderers got up from their seat and left.
- 2.1 Soon after they had left, Anurādha thought, “If those wanderers were to inquire further, how should I answer them so as to repeat what the Buddha has said, and not misrepresent him with an untruth? How should I explain in line with his teaching, so that there would be no legitimate grounds for rebuke and criticism?”

Then Venerable Anurādhā went up to the Buddha, bowed, sat 2.4  
down to one side, and told him what had happened.

“What do you think, Anurādhā? Is form permanent or imper- 3.1  
manent?”

“Impermanent, sir.” 4.1

“But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?” 5.1

“Suffering, sir.” 6.1

“But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be 7.1  
regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”

“No, sir.” 8.1

“Is feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness per- 9.1  
manent or impermanent?”

“Impermanent, sir.” 10.1

“But if it’s impermanent, is it suffering or happiness?” 11.1

“Suffering, sir.” 12.1

“But if it’s impermanent, suffering, and perishable, is it fit to be 13.1  
regarded thus: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self?’”

“No, sir.” 14.1

“So, Anurādhā, you should truly see any kind of form at all— 15.1  
past, future, or present; internal or external; coarse or fine; inferior  
or superior; far or near: *all* form—with right understanding: ‘This  
is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’ Any kind of feeling  
... perception ... choices ... consciousness at all—past, future, or  
present; internal or external; coarse or fine; inferior or superior;  
far or near: *all* consciousness—with right understanding: ‘This is  
not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’

Seeing this, a learned noble disciple grows disillusioned with 15.6  
form, feeling, perception, choices, and consciousness. Being disil-  
lusioned, desire fades away. When desire fades away they’re freed.  
When they’re freed, they know they’re freed.

They understand: ‘Rebirth is ended, the spiritual journey has 15.8  
been completed, what had to be done has been done, there is no  
return to any state of existence.’

- 16.1     What do you think, Anurādhā? Do you regard the Realized One as form?”
- 16.3     “No, sir.”
- 16.4     “Do you regard the Realized One as feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness?”
- 16.11    “No, sir.”
- 16.12    “What do you think, Anurādhā? Do you regard the Realized One as in form?”
- 16.14    “No, sir.”
- 16.15    “Or do you regard the Realized One as distinct from form?”
- 16.16    “No, sir.”
- 16.17    “Do you regard the Realized One as in feeling ... or distinct from feeling ... as in perception ... or distinct from perception ... as in choices ... or distinct from choices ... as in consciousness ... or as distinct from consciousness?”
- 16.26    “No, sir.”
- 17.1     “What do you think, Anurādhā? Do you regard the Realized One as possessing form, feeling, perception, choices, and consciousness?”
- 17.3     “No, sir.”
- 17.4     “What do you think, Anurādhā? Do you regard the Realized One as one who is without form, feeling, perception, choices, and consciousness?”
- 17.6     “No, sir.”
- 17.7     “In that case, Anurādhā, since you don’t actually find the Realized One in the present life, is it appropriate to declare: ‘Reverends, when a Realized One is describing a Realized One—a supreme person, highest of people, who has reached the highest point—they describe them other than these four ways: After death, a Realized One still exists, or no longer exists, or both still exists and no longer exists, or neither still exists nor no longer exists’?”
- 17.11    “No, sir.”
- 17.12    “Good, good, Anurādhā! In the past, as today, what I describe is suffering and the cessation of suffering.”

SN 44.3

## With Sāriputta and Koṭṭhita (1st)

*Paṭhamasāriputtakotṭhikasutta*

At one time Venerable Sāriputta and Venerable Mahākoṭṭhita were 1.1  
staying near Varanasi, in the deer park at Isipatana.

Then in the late afternoon, Venerable Mahākoṭṭhita came out of 1.2  
retreat, went to Venerable Sāriputta, and exchanged greetings with  
him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat  
down to one side, and said to Sāriputta:

“Reverend Sāriputta, does a realized one exist after death?” 2.1

“Reverend, this has not been declared by the Buddha.” 2.2

“Well then, does a realized one not exist after death? ... 2.4

Does a realized one both exist and not exist after death? ... 2.7

Does a realized one neither exist nor not exist after death?” 2.10

“This too has not been declared by the Buddha.” 2.11

“Reverend, when asked these questions, you say that they have 3.1  
not been declared by the Buddha. What’s the cause, what’s the  
reason why they have not been declared by the Buddha?”

“Reverend, ‘does a realized one exist after death?’ is included 4.1  
in form. ‘Does a realized one not exist after death?’ is included in  
form. ‘Does a realized one both exist and not exist after death?’ is  
included in form. ‘Does a realized one neither exist nor not exist  
after death?’ is included in form.

‘Does a realized one exist after death?’ is included in feeling ... 4.5  
perception ... choices ... consciousness. ‘Does a realized one not  
exist after death?’ is included in consciousness. ‘Does a realized one  
both exist and not exist after death?’ is included in consciousness.  
‘Does a realized one neither exist nor not exist after death?’ is  
included in consciousness.

This is the cause, this is the reason why this has not been declared 4.21  
by the Buddha.”

SN 44.4

## With Sāriputta and Koṭṭhita (2nd)

*Dutiyasāriputtakotṭhikasutta*

- 1.1 At one time Venerable Sāriputta and Venerable Mahākoṭṭhita were staying near Varanasi, in the deer park at Isipatana. ...  
*(The same down as far as:)*
- 1.3 “What’s the cause, reverend, what’s the reason why this has not been declared by the Buddha?”
- 1.4 “Reverend, not truly knowing and seeing form, its origin, its cessation, and the practice that leads to its cessation, one thinks ‘a realized one still exists after death’ or ‘A realized one no longer exists after death’ or ‘a realized one both still exists and no longer exists after death’ or ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.’
- 1.8 Not truly knowing or seeing feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness, its origin, its cessation, and the practice that leads to its cessation, one thinks ‘a realized one still exists after death’ or ‘A realized one no longer exists after death’ or ‘a realized one both still exists and no longer exists after death’ or ‘A realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.’
- 2.1 Truly knowing and seeing form ... feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness, its origin, its cessation, and the practice that leads to its cessation, one doesn’t think ‘a realized one still exists after death’ or ‘A realized one no longer exists after death’ or ‘a realized one both still exists and no longer exists after death’ or ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.’
- 2.10 This is the cause, this is the reason why this has not been declared by the Buddha.”

SN 44.5

## With Sāriputta and Koṭṭhita (3rd)

*Tatīyasāriputtakōṭṭhikasutta*

At one time Venerable Sāriputta and Venerable Mahākōṭṭhita were 1.1  
staying near Varanasi, in the deer park at Isipatana. ...

*(The same down as far as:)*

“What’s the cause, reverend, what’s the reason why this has not 1.3  
been declared by the Buddha?”

“Reverend, if you’re not rid of greed, desire, fondness, thirst, 1.4  
passion, and craving for form ... feeling ... perception ... choices  
... consciousness, you think ‘a realized one still exists after death’  
... ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.’

If you are rid of greed for form ... feeling ... perception ... 1.11  
choices ... consciousness, you don’t think ‘a realized one still exists  
after death’ ... ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists  
after death.’

This is the cause, this is the reason why this has not been declared 1.17  
by the Buddha.”

SN 44.6

## With Sāriputta and Koṭṭhita (4th)

*Catutthasāriputtakōṭṭhikasutta*

At one time Venerable Sāriputta and Venerable Mahākōṭṭhita were 1.1  
staying near Varanasi, in the deer park at Isipatana.

Then in the late afternoon, Venerable Sāriputta came out of 1.2  
retreat, went to Venerable Mahākōṭṭhita, and they greeted each  
other. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he  
sat down to one side and said to Mahākōṭṭhita:

“Reverend Koṭṭhita, does a realized one exist after death?” ... 1.4

- 1.5 “Reverend, when asked these questions, you say that this has not been declared by the Buddha. What’s the cause, what’s the reason why this has not been declared by the Buddha?”
- 2.1 “Reverend, if you like, love, and enjoy form, and don’t truly see the cessation of form, you think ‘a realized one still exists after death’ or ‘A realized one no longer exists after death’ or ‘a realized one both still exists and no longer exists after death’ or ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.’
- 2.5 If you like, love, and enjoy feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness, and don’t truly see the cessation of consciousness, you think ‘a realized one still exists after death’ ... ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.’
- 3.1 If you don’t like, love, and enjoy form ... feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness, and you truly see the cessation of consciousness, you don’t think ‘a realized one still exists after death’ ... ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.’
- 3.8 This is the cause, this is the reason why this has not been declared by the Buddha.”
- 4.1 “But reverend, could there be another way of explaining why this was not declared by the Buddha?”
- 4.2 “There could, reverend. If you like, love, and enjoy existence, and don’t truly see the cessation of continued existence, you think ‘a realized one still exists after death’ ... ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.’ If you don’t like, love, and enjoy existence, and you truly see the cessation of continued existence, you don’t think ‘a realized one still exists after death’ ... ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.’ This too is a way of explaining why this was not declared by the Buddha.”
- 5.1 “But reverend, could there be another way of explaining why this was not declared by the Buddha?”
- 5.2 “There could, reverend.
- 5.3 If you like, love, and enjoy grasping, and don’t truly see the cessation of grasping, you think ‘a realized one still exists after



death' ... 'a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.'

If you don't like, love, and enjoy grasping, and you truly see the cessation of grasping, you don't think 'a realized one still exists after death' ... 'a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.' 5.5

This too is a way of explaining why this was not declared by the Buddha." 5.7

"But reverend, could there be another way of explaining why this was not declared by the Buddha?" 6.1

"There could, reverend. 6.2

If you like, love, and enjoy craving, and don't truly see the cessation of craving, you think 'a realized one still exists after death' ... 'a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.' 6.3

If you don't like, love, and enjoy craving, and you truly see the cessation of craving, you don't think 'a realized one still exists after death' ... 'a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death.' 6.5

This too is a way of explaining why this was not declared by the Buddha." 6.7

"But reverend, could there be another way of explaining why this was not declared by the Buddha?" 7.1

"Seriously, reverend, what more could you want? For one who is freed due to the ending of craving, there is no cycle of rebirths to be found." 7.2

SN 44.7

## With Moggallāna

*Moggallānasutta*

Then the wanderer Vacchagotta went up to Venerable Mahāmo-ggallāna, and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side, and said to Mahāmoggallāna: 1.1

- 2.1 “Master Moggallāna, is this right: ‘the cosmos is eternal’?”
- 2.2 “Vaccha, this has not been declared by the Buddha.”
- 2.4 “Then is this right: ‘the cosmos is not eternal’ ... ‘the cosmos is finite’ ... ‘the cosmos is infinite’ ... ‘the soul and the body are identical’ ... ‘the soul and the body are different things’ ... ‘a realized one still exists after death’ ... ‘A realized one no longer exists after death’ ... ‘a realized one both still exists and no longer exists after death’ ... ‘a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death’?”
- 2.29 “This too has not been declared by the Buddha.”
- 3.1 “What’s the cause, Master Moggallāna, what’s the reason why, when the wanderers of other religions are asked these questions, they declare one of these to be true? And what’s the reason why, when the ascetic Gotama is asked these questions, he does not declare one of these to be true?”
- 4.1 “Vaccha, the wanderers of other religions regard the eye like this: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self.’ They regard the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind like this: ‘This is mine, I am this, this is my self.’
- 4.4 That’s why, when asked, they declare one of those answers to be true.
- 4.7 The Realized One, the perfected one, the fully awakened Buddha regards the eye like this: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’ He regards the ear ... nose ... tongue ... body ... mind like this: ‘This is not mine, I am not this, this is not my self.’
- 4.10 That’s why, when asked, he does not declare one of those answers to be true.”
- 5.1 Then the wanderer Vacchagotta got up from his seat and went to the Buddha and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side. He asked the Buddha the same questions, and received the same answers.
- 8.1 He said, “It’s incredible, Master Gotama, it’s amazing! How the meaning and the phrasing of the teacher and the disciple fit together

and agree without contradiction when it comes to the chief matter! Just now I went to the ascetic Mahāmoggallāna and asked him about this matter. And he explained it to me with these words and phrases, just like Master Gotama. It's incredible, Master Gotama, it's amazing! How the meaning and the phrasing of the teacher and the disciple fit together and agree without contradiction when it comes to the chief matter!"

SN 44.8

## With Vacchagotta

*Vacchagottasutta*

Then the wanderer Vacchagotta went up to the Buddha and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side, and said to the Buddha: 1.1

"Master Gotama, is this right: 'the cosmos is eternal'?" 1.3

"This has not been declared by me, Vaccha." ... 1.4

"Then is this right: 'a realized one neither still exists nor no longer exists after death'?" 1.5

"This too has not been declared by me." 1.6

"What's the cause, Master Gotama, what's the reason why, when the wanderers of other religions are asked these questions, they declare one of these to be true? And what's the reason why, when Master Gotama is asked these questions, he does not declare one of these to be true?" 2.1

"Vaccha, the wanderers of other religions regard form as self, self as having form, form in self, or self in form. They regard feeling ... perception ... choices ... consciousness as self, self as having consciousness, consciousness in self, or self in consciousness. 3.1

That's why they answer these questions when asked. 3.6

The Realized One doesn't regard form as self, self as having form, form in self, or self in form. He doesn't regard feeling ... perception 3.9

... choices ... consciousness as self, self as having consciousness, consciousness in self, or self in consciousness.

3.14 That's why he doesn't answer these questions when asked."

4.1 Then the wanderer Vacchagotta got up from his seat and went to Venerable Mahāmoggallāna, and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side. He asked Mahāmoggallāna the same questions, and received the same answers.

7.1 He said, "It's incredible, Master Moggallāna, it's amazing. How the meaning and the phrasing of the teacher and the disciple fit together and agree without contradiction when it comes to the chief matter! Just now I went to the ascetic Gotama and asked him about this matter. And he explained it to me with these words and phrases, just like Master Moggallāna. It's incredible, Master Moggallāna, it's amazing! How the meaning and the phrasing of the teacher and the disciple fit together and agree without contradiction when it comes to the chief matter!"

SN 44.9

## The Debating Hall

*Kutūhalasālāsutta*

1.1 Then the wanderer Vacchagotta went up to the Buddha and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side, and said to the Buddha:

2.1 "Master Gotama, a few days ago several ascetics, brahmins, and wanderers who follow various other religions were sitting together in the debating hall, and this discussion came up among them: 'This Pūraṇa Kassapa leads an order and a community, and teaches a community. He's a well-known and famous religious founder, deemed holy by many people. When a disciple passes away, he declares that this one is reborn here, while that one is reborn there. And as for a disciple who is a supreme person, highest of people,

having reached the highest point, when they pass away he also declares that this one is reborn here, while that one is reborn there.

This bamboo-staffed ascetic Gosāla ... the Jain ascetic of the 3.1  
 Nātika clan ... Sañjaya Belatṭhiputta ... Pakudha Kaccāyana ...  
 Ajita of the hair blanket leads an order and a community, and  
 teaches a community. He's a well-known and famous religious  
 founder, deemed holy by many people. When a disciple passes  
 away, he declares that this one is reborn here, while that one is  
 reborn there. And as for a disciple who is a supreme person, highest  
 of people, having reached the highest point, when they pass away  
 he also declares that this one is reborn here, while that one is reborn  
 there.

This ascetic Gotama leads an order and a community, and 4.1  
 teaches a community. He's a well-known and famous religious  
 founder, deemed holy by many people. When a disciple passes  
 away, he declares that this one is reborn here, while that one is  
 reborn there.

But as for a disciple who is a supreme person, highest of people, 4.4  
 having reached the highest point, when they pass away he doesn't  
 declare that this one is reborn here, while that one is reborn there.  
 Rather, he declares that they have cut off craving, untied the fet-  
 ters, and by rightly comprehending conceit have made an end of  
 suffering.' I had doubt and uncertainty about that: 'How on earth  
 can I understand the ascetic Gotama's teaching?'"

"Vaccha, no wonder you're doubting and uncertain. Doubt has 5.1  
 come up in you about an uncertain matter.

I describe rebirth for someone who grasps fuel, not for someone 5.3  
 who doesn't grasp fuel. It's like a fire which only burns with fuel,  
 not without fuel. In the same way I describe rebirth for someone  
 who grasps fuel, not for someone who doesn't grasp fuel."

"But when a flame is blown away by the wind, what does Master 6.1  
 Gotama say is its fuel then?"

"At such a time, I say that it's fueled by wind. For the wind is its 6.2  
 fuel then."

- 6.4 “But when someone who is attached has laid down this body and has not been reborn in one of the realms, what does Master Gotama say is their fuel then?”
- 6.5 “When someone who is attached has laid down this body, Vaccha, and has not been reborn in one of the realms, I say they’re fueled by craving. For craving is their fuel then.”

SN 44.10

## With Ānanda

*Ānandasutta*

- 1.1 Then the wanderer Vacchagotta went up to the Buddha and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side and said to the Buddha:
- 1.3 “Master Gotama, does the self survive?” But when he said this, the Buddha kept silent.
- 1.5 “Then does the self not survive?” But for a second time the Buddha kept silent. Then the wanderer Vacchagotta got up from his seat and left.
- 2.1 And then, not long after Vacchagotta had left, Venerable Ānanda said to the Buddha:
- 2.2 “Sir, why didn’t you answer Vacchagotta’s question?”
- 2.3 “Ānanda, when Vacchagotta asked me whether the self survives, if I had answered that ‘the self survives’ I would have been siding with the ascetics and brahmins who are eternalists. When Vacchagotta asked me whether the self does not survive, if I had answered that ‘the self does not survive’ I would have been siding with the ascetics and brahmins who are annihilationists.
- 2.5 When Vacchagotta asked me whether the self survives, if I had answered that ‘the self survives’ would that help give rise to the knowledge that all things are not-self?”
- 2.7 “No, sir.”
- 2.8 “When Vacchagotta asked me whether the self does not survive, if I had answered that ‘the self does not survive’, Vacchagotta—

who is already confused—would have got even more confused, thinking: ‘It seems that the self that I once had no longer survives.’”

SN 44.11

## With Sabhiya Kaccāna

*Sabhiyakaccānasutta*

At one time Venerable Sabhiya Kaccāna was staying at Nātika in the brick house. Then the wanderer Vacchagotta went up to him, and exchanged greetings with him. When the greetings and polite conversation were over, he sat down to one side, and said to Sabhiya Kaccāna:

“Master Kaccāna, does a realized one exist after death?” 1.4

“Vaccha, this has not been declared by the Buddha.” 1.5

“Well then, does a realized one not exist after death?” 1.7

“This too has not been declared by the Buddha.” 1.8

“Well then, does a realized one both exist and not exist after death?” 2.1

“This has not been declared by the Buddha.” 2.2

“Well then, does a realized one neither exist nor not exist after death?” 2.4

“This too has not been declared by the Buddha.” 2.5

“Master Kaccāna, when asked these questions, you say that this has not been declared by the Buddha. What’s the cause, what’s the reason why this has not been declared by the Buddha?” 3.1

“In order to describe him as ‘possessing form’ or ‘formless’ or ‘percipient’ or ‘non-percipient’ or ‘neither percipient nor non-percipient’, there must be some cause or reason for doing so. But if that cause and reason were to totally and utterly cease without anything left over, how could you describe him in any such terms?” 3.14

“Master Kaccāna, how long has it been since you went forth?” 3.16

“Not long, reverend: three years.” 3.17

“Well, you’ve learned a lot already, let alone what lies ahead!” 3.18

**The Linked Discourses on unde-  
clared questions are complete.**

THE BOOK OF THE SIX SENSE FIELDS IS FINISHED.



# Colophon

## The Translator

Bhikkhu Sujato was born as Anthony Aidan Best on 4/11/1966 in Perth, Western Australia. He grew up in the pleasant suburbs of Mt Lawley and Attadale alongside his sister Nicola, who was the good child. His mother, Margaret Lorraine Huntsman née Pinder, said “he’ll either be a priest or a poet”, while his father, Anthony Thomas Best, advised him to “never do anything for money”. He attended Aquinas College, a Catholic school, where he decided to become an atheist. At the University of WA he studied philosophy, aiming to learn what he wanted to do with his life. Finding that what he wanted to do was play guitar, he dropped out. His main band was named Martha’s Vineyard, which achieved modest success in the indie circuit.

A seemingly random encounter with a roadside joey took him to Thailand, where he entered his first meditation retreat at Wat Ram Poeng, Chiang Mai in 1992. Feeling the call to the Buddha’s path, he took full ordination in Wat Pa Nanachat in 1994, where his teachers were Ajahn Pasanno and Ajahn Jayasaro. In 1997 he returned to Perth to study with Ajahn Brahm at Bodhinyana Monastery.

He spent several years practicing in seclusion in Malaysia and Thailand before establishing Santi Forest Monastery in Bundanoon, NSW, in 2003. There he was instrumental in supporting the establishment of the Theravada bhikkhuni order in Australia

and advocating for women's rights. He continues to teach in Australia and globally, with a special concern for the moral implications of climate change and other forms of environmental destruction. He has published a series of books of original and groundbreaking research on early Buddhism.

In 2005 he founded SuttaCentral together with Rod Bucknell and John Kelly. In 2015, seeing the need for a complete, accurate, plain English translation of the Pali texts, he undertook the task, spending nearly three years in isolation on the isle of Qi Mei off the coast of the nation of Taiwan. He completed the four main Nikāyas in 2018, and the early books of the Khuddaka Nikāya were complete by 2021. All this work is dedicated to the public domain and is entirely free of copyright encumbrance.

In 2019 he returned to Sydney where he established Lokanta Vihara (The Monastery at the End of the World).

## Creation Process

Primary source was the digital Mahāsaṅgīti edition of the Pali Tipiṭaka. Translated from the Pali, with reference to several English translations, especially those of Bhikkhu Bodhi.

## The Translation

This translation was part of a project to translate the four Pali Nikāyas with the following aims: plain, approachable English; consistent terminology; accurate rendition of the Pali; free of copyright. It was made during 2016–2018 while Bhikkhu Sujato was staying in Qimei, Taiwan.

## About SuttaCentral

SuttaCentral publishes early Buddhist texts. Since 2005 we have provided root texts in Pali, Chinese, Sanskrit, Tibetan, and other

languages, parallels between these texts, and translations in many modern languages. Building on the work of generations of scholars, we offer our contribution freely.

SuttaCentral is driven by volunteer contributions, and in addition we employ professional developers. We offer a sponsorship program for high quality translations from the original languages. Financial support for SuttaCentral is handled by the SuttaCentral Development Trust, a charitable trust registered in Australia.

## About Bilara

“Bilara” means “cat” in Pali, and it is the name of our Computer Assisted Translation (CAT) software. Bilara is a web app that enables translators to translate early Buddhist texts into their own language. These translations are published on SuttaCentral with the root text and translation side by side.

## About SuttaCentral Editions

The SuttaCentral Editions project makes high quality books from selected Bilara translations. These are published in formats including HTML, EPUB, PDF, and print.

You are welcome to print any of our Editions.